

"He Who Got Wet" by Guangmu Feiqing

Copywriter:

Occupation: Badass high school student x pretty dance teacher

Personality: A bad pervert, a younger top, a gentle bottom, and a seduce person

*

Chi Lie first met Tang Shiqi in the dance studio

A man wearing loose dance clothes, with his right foot stretched straight on the bar, revealing half of his calf

He doesn't understand dancing, he just thinks this person is so beautiful

The face is beautiful, the instep is beautiful, the body shape is beautiful, and every line of the body is just soft and just right

In an instant, desire filled his imagination, and he could only hear his own restless heartbeat.

So Chi Lie began to observe Tang Shiqi, understand him, get close to him, and plot to prey on him.

Chi Lie deliberately went out in the rain to treat his fever, provoked a conflict and allowed himself to be beaten, artificially worsening his wounds

He pretended to be penniless and homeless

Who made Teacher Tang so soft-hearted? As long as he was injured, she would take him home with love and take good care of him.

He used lies and simple self-harm to pile up his desires, but Tang Shiqi accepted everything he did.

Until that day

" Teacher Tang, I saw you kissing a man. "

" Well, why can't I ? "

Being pretty is a sin, Tang Shiqi's sin

Chi Lie sentenced him

Younger high school boy x dancer, sweet love, happy ending

Chapter 1 He is like a melting ice cream

01

Because of transferring schools, Chi Lie moved to a small county town a week ago and is temporarily living in his cousin's house.

At first, my cousin followed the principle of " everyone is a guest " and killed chickens and ducks, and prepared fish and meat for him, wishing she could treat him as her own son who had been lost for many years.

But that was only at the beginning. Now, a week later, it's a completely different story.

Because he got zero in all subjects in the exams at the beginning of the month, violated the rules three times in seven days, skipped classes many times, instigated two dogs on the street to fight in the middle of the night, and plucked feathers from his own rooster to make a brush, etc.

He successfully led himself from the ranks of " own son " to the blacklist of his cousin. Just now, because it was too hot in the summer and there was no air conditioning in the classroom, he decided to climb over the wall to go back to his cousin's house, and then he was honored to be " the dean of studies calls the parents . "

My cousin was holding a feather duster, probably because she was afraid that he would pluck all the feathers off the duster, so she said in a low voice, " Tell me, have you done anything humane since you came here? "

Chi Lie disagreed, " Not everything a person does is human. "

" You're still talking back! " My cousin waved the feather duster lightly, but this action was far less intimidating than her expression.

Chi Lie shrugged without answering. He didn't care whether the feather duster would fall on him or not. The pain caused by this thing was far less terrible than any he had experienced before. My cousin finally put down her arms, took a deep breath, and said helplessly: " Go back to school. Do you think it's right to run home because you're hot? "

Chi Lie wanted to say something reasonable, that he couldn't stand the heat and was prone to heat stroke, but he didn't say it. After all, no one would care whether he really was prone to heat stroke or not, they would just think he was making excuses.

He refused in a different way, " It's half past five, and there's still half an hour before school ends. Should I go and listen to the school bell to cultivate my character? "

" You ... ! Tsk. " My cousin frowned and rubbed her forehead. " Then go pick up Yaya. Go to the second floor opposite the supermarket. Get out of here. I don't want to see you for now. " Chi Lie still didn't say anything. He took the electric car key from the table, opened the refrigerator, took out a small pudding ice cream, pinched the ice cream stick to poke open the seal, and walked out holding the pile of packaging bags.

Yaya is my cousin's daughter. She is seven years old this year. She finishes school early in primary school and all her classes at four o'clock. Then she goes to a nearby dance class to learn dancing.

Chi Lie didn't like chattering kids very much, and the dance class and senior high school's school closing time overlapped, so this was his first time to pick up Yaya.

He controlled the direction with one hand and held the ice cream with the other. There was a child seat installed on the foot pedal of the electric scooter, so his long legs could only be supported outside.

It was almost six o'clock, and the junior and senior high schools were about to get out of school. The hawking of vendors was noisy , and parents and students were blocking the streets and alleys. His knees were inevitably bumped and scratched against others.

Before anyone else said anything, he started to feel uncomfortable. His brows were furrowed as if they could hold the ice cream with his hands, and he even wished his knees could be shaved. But thanks to the small ice cream, his temper was calmed down and he made it safely to the dance class opposite the supermarket.

There are not many children learning dance in the county town. There are only a few parents' electric bikes parked at the door, dividing the parking spaces in a haphazard manner.

Chi Lie parked the car upright on the side of the road. He still had half of the pudding left to eat. He tilted his head, bit off the edge that was about to melt, and walked inside holding the packaging bag.

There is a jewelry store downstairs. As soon as he entered the store, the cool air from the air conditioner greeted him first, and the milky white color of the ice cream seemed not cool enough. Next came the neatly arranged macaron-colored accessories, candy-colored decorations and facilities, filled with middle school girls in school uniform skirts.

For a moment, he thought he had stepped into the world of animation. The feeling inside was so beautiful and dreamy, completely separated from the noisy small county town behind.

There were no clerks on the first floor, and Chi Lie was not very interested in the pink accessories. He followed the signs and went up to the second floor from the indoor stairs on the side.

The stairs were against a wall, and the wall was covered with untidy graffiti. He thought it was probably drawn by the little kids in the dance class.

He still had no interest in this and planned to eat the last bite of the pudding while waiting outside the dance studio for Yaya to finish class.

The sight before him made him forget to eat.

A huge glass partition neatly divides the second floor into two areas. Near the stairs is the waiting area for parents. Several women sit on small sofas and look at their children through the glass.

Even though the children are wearing the same training clothes and have the same hairstyle, their mothers can still recognize them at a glance.

But Chi Lie's eyes were not able to recognize Yaya, so the first person he saw was the dance teacher in the center.

One wearing a white loose dance training suit.
man.

In the impression of an outsider like him, most dance teachers are female, but now, his brain doesn't have much time to think about the affairs of men and women.

His sight and consciousness were all captured by the man in front of him in an instant.

The man put his right leg on the barre, straightened his instep without dancing shoes, and slid down the loose trouser legs of his training suit, revealing smooth and gentle lines from his calf to his toes.

The handrail is next to the window. At six o'clock in the summer, there is still sunlight like at noon. The tiny and thin rays of sunlight pass through the white window frame, float on the man's body, and lift his hair.

From Chi Lie's angle, he couldn't see the man's face. He could only see his back and the outline of his figure under the soft light.

The outline was clearly that of a man, but he thought he was handsome.

The window in front of the man was half open. The wind outside lifted the hollow curtains, swaying the light and shadows. Light spots of light flowed and slid down the man's slender white calves.

It was like a melted pudding ice cream, with white and sweet liquid dripping from the tip.

It was not until the back of his hand felt cold that Chi Lie finally came to his senses. It turned out that the small pudding ice cream in his hand had really melted. The melted liquid was blocked by the pile of wrapping paper, and then flowed out, slowly falling on the back of his hand, leaving a trail of cool water.

Then the bell for the end of class rang. He paused and turned to the clock on the wall. The time showed 6:15 . At least twenty minutes had passed since he arrived on the second floor.

The little girls in pink dance costumes jumped out and threw themselves into their mothers' arms. The scene in front of them became messy and blurry. Chi Lie didn't care about the messy ice cream in his hands. He squeezed through the crowd and walked straight to the dance studio. What is he going to do? I don't know, but he wants to go.

But it was not smooth, he was stopped in front of the glass partition. Looking up, it was the man who had just leaned on the window railing.

The man faced him, with his back to the sunlight coming through the window. The few unruly strands of hair were outlined with golden edges, and the man's face was also reflected, looking soft and translucent.

He stood blankly at the door, watching the man's lips move, but he could not hear any sound, except, of course, the beating of his heart in his ears.

But he didn't find it strange.

The man stood behind the partition. The open glass door had a dark brown door frame, like an old picture frame, and the man was framed in it, like a painting.

Humans and paintings are two different worlds, and he did not expect to catch the person in the painting at this moment.

It was not until the person in the painting stepped into his world and a slender hand touched his shoulder with its fingertips that he broke away from the dull and chaotic summer daydream.

The man's words reached his ears.

" Hey ... classmate? Are you okay? Did you get heatstroke? "

" I ..." Chi Lie opened his mouth, but his voice was extremely hoarse, as if it had been sealed for many years and then suddenly restarted.

The man opposite him looked puzzled as he noticed the melting ice cream on the back of Chi Lie's hand. " Are you here to borrow a tissue? "

Then he turned around and went into the dance studio, took out a tissue and a wet wipe, turned around and stuffed them into Chi Lie's hand, smiled slightly, and said, " Wipe it. "

After saying that, the man turned around and went back to the classroom. There was a child dozing off and sleeping on the carpet, so he wanted to go and check it out.

Chi Lie also finally recovered from his shock.

Just now, when the man handed him something, his fingertips seemed to touch him. It was only a second, but it was enough for him to remember the touch.

It was like milky white ice cream melting on the back of his hand.

The author has something to say:

①The author likes comments. If you want to comment but don't know what to say, you can give [Read]

② Currently, there are updates every 6–14 days , and they are updated very quickly, so don't worry.

If there are any adjustments, please see the top comment reply for details

③No writing guidance, random comments , or nitpicking

Don't judge the protagonist's logic by your own experience. Your experience is not the universal truth.

④ The author likes to write comments. If you don't like reading, you can turn off the comments in [Settings] – [More Settings] to respect each other.

Chapter 2 Seeing Him Again

02

Chi Lie threw the ice cream bag into the trash can beside the wall, and wiped it clean with a tissue. He finally remembered what he was here for.

The parent waiting area behind him was already empty. He stretched his neck to look into the classroom and saw the man waking up a chubby girl.

The little fat girl rubbed her eyes in a daze, and when she woke up, she ran towards him with a grin on her face, " Uncle! You came to pick me up, so nice! "

" Ah. " Chi Lie responded, but his eyes couldn't stop glancing into the partition.

Fortunately, God fulfilled his wish. The man walked to the door again, carrying a small yellow schoolbag. " It turns out to be Yaya's parents. Here, Yaya's schoolbag. "

Without waiting for Chi Lie to take it, the little girl took it and put it on her back, leaving Chi Lie's hand hanging in the air.

Perhaps because he was afraid of embarrassing him, the man did not take his hand back immediately after the schoolbag slipped out of his hand. Instead, he took Chi Lie's hand and shook it.

" Hello, I am Yaya's dance teacher, Tang Shiqi. "

Only at this moment did Chi Lie truly hear the voice of the person in front of him. It was like ice-cold sugar water. The first impression was that it was cold, but after taking a sip and savoring it, he realized that it was sweet.

Chi Lie shook his hand back, his voice also softened by the sweetness, " Hello, Chi Lie. "

Tang Shiqi smiled and withdrew her hand, half squatted down to say goodbye to Yaya, then turned around to pack up her things in the classroom.

Chi Lie stood still and closed his eyes tightly. When they shook hands just now, they were very close. He estimated that Tang Shiqi was only at the tip of his nose.

He always thought that he was the type of player who was on the school basketball team and was his equal .

But no, it turns out that his preference could also be for a handsome man who is smaller than him.

He just found out today.

During the time he was stunned, his eyes were glued to the partition. Fortunately, Tang Shiqi was packing things with his back to him, so he didn't get so reckless and didn't get caught.

To wake up, he led Yaya downstairs and bought the little girl a lollipop and grilled cold noodles at the door.

The road was still crowded, the voices were noisy, and Chi Lie had to prop his knees up helplessly. So scrapes and collisions were still unavoidable.

But this time, Chi Lie didn't care.

After struggling all the way, and only two more intersections away from home, he cleared his throat, lowered his chin slightly and asked Yaya, "Hey, how old is your teacher?"

Yaya looked up, "Twenty-six years old, birthday in September, love to drink fruit tea, live alone, single!"

If Chi Lie hadn't had to watch the road while riding an electric bike, he would have definitely stared at Yaya's eyes carefully and inquired into her. Before he said anything else, this little fat girl acted like she was going on a blind date.

The electric bike turned into the intersection, and Chi Lie asked casually, "You like your teacher very much? You know so much about him."

Yaya is still young and can't think of anything. When asked by adults, she answered, "Jingjing told me that her mother wants to arrange a blind date for Teacher Tang."

Chi Lie tightened his grip on the handlebars and slowed down the train. "Oh, when will he go on a blind date?"

"He's not going." At this point, Yaya frowned as if she didn't understand, "He said he wanted to find sheep dung eggs, round dung!"

Chi Lie had never raised a child before, so he barely understood Yaya's train of thought. He felt inexplicably relieved, but he didn't have time to delve into it because another feeling was even stronger.

He was a bit of a germaphobe, and when he heard the word "yangshidandan", it seemed as if Yaya's words smelled like sheep, which made him want to speed up and go home to take a shower.

This alley is full of intersections, but fortunately the alley is narrow and cars can only pass slowly, so there are no traffic accidents.

But since Chi Lie unexpectedly came to the small county town, everything became an exception. At the last intersection before home, when he was about to reach the gate, a puppy jumped out.

It was really a puppy. It looked not even as thick as the wheel of an electric bike, but it was a living creature. Chi Lie subconsciously just wanted to avoid it.

He had been used to wildness since he was a child, and was good at drifting and racing. The accident happened suddenly, and he forgot that there was a little fat girl sitting in the child seat in front of him.

The dog dodged, but Yaya's little head hit the electric bike with a bang, and his own knees hit the wall.

He didn't feel much pain, he braked and supported himself with his legs. After three seconds of silence, Yaya came back to his senses from the danger, and his loud crying could be heard at least three, four or five streets away.

So of course my cousin heard it too.

Before seeing the person, I heard the voice, " Ya Ya! What happened to Ya Ya! "

Before Chi Lie could get out of the car to check, his cousin had already rushed over, holding her daughter's head and looking left and right. There was no bleeding or skin damage, but a small bump had appeared on the forehead.

She immediately raised her hand and slapped Chi Lie's arm, two or three times, without holding back any strength, her hand was hurt, " Tell me about you! What else can you accomplish! You can't study, you can't live, go to hell! "

Before Chi Lie could even offer the briefest three-word apology, Yaya had already been carried away by her cousin, leaving Chi Lie alone in the alley, listening to the neighbors who had come over after hearing the noise and talking about her.

It was rare, and he knew that this time it was really his fault. He was holding the handlebars and didn't know whether he should enter the door.

In the end, he didn't go in, and he turned around and rode away, heading towards the pharmacy. He didn't know what medicine to buy in this situation, so he would just ask when the time comes.

He is a man who finds it difficult to admit his mistakes and has a short memory. Without anyone on the pedals, he rode faster and bought the medicine in just three or two minutes.

By the time he reached the door, Yaya's crying had not yet subsided.

He rode his bike in and parked it, holding a plastic bag of various ointments. He just heard his cousin blaming herself with a tearful voice.

" Don't cry, Yaya. Mommy won't let anyone else pick you up. It won't be like this anymore. "

" Your uncle is a worthless person. Don't cry. Come to mom and take another look. Oh my, baby, mom is sorry for you. "

Chi Lie took a deep breath and walked into the house with the medicine. At times like this, he was usually not good at speaking, so he just stretched out his hand to hand over the medicine. My cousin had only been with him for about a week and had no idea of his temper. Seeing the expression on Chi Lie's face, she thought he was indifferent and instantly became furious, completely ignoring Chi Lie's actions.

" You don't even know how to say sorry? " She stood up and pushed Chi Lie.

Chi Lie was a stubborn person who would not tolerate any hardship unless he was treated kindly. The more this happened, the more he kept silent and did not even bother to defend himself. He staggered backwards in the direction his cousin was pushing him.

Seeing that he didn't say anything, the cousin picked up the feather duster, swung it up, and hit him hard, " Who are you trying to show your ugly face to? Get out! Our family can't afford to support a big Buddha like you! Get out! Get out! "

Chi Lie was in pain and fell out step by step. But before he was pushed out of the door, he reached out and threw the medicine into the room.

The woman's yelling and the child's crying mixed together and enveloped his ears, giving him a headache. " Chi Lie! You are a heartless person. Your father was right! You have the temper of an animal. Anyone who gets involved with you will be in trouble! "

Finally, he was pushed hard and the door slammed shut in front of him. A muffled sound was heard, and his cousin kicked him hard through the door.

that his cousin was well-known for her love for her daughter. He also knew that he had done something wrong today.

But he is not a heartless person, and he is not without guilt. Even if he is the one at fault, being wronged and misunderstood still cannot stop the grievance and depression from flooding.

But he is a man who doesn't like to talk much, and he keeps it to himself inside, making it overflow and swollen.

After a while, the door creaked open again, and my cousin threw out twenty yuan, then slammed the door shut again.

He didn't understand the meaning of the twenty yuan. Did it mean that he didn't want to see him temporarily, so he used the twenty yuan to go out and eat and come back later, or did it mean that he never wanted to see him again, so he used the twenty yuan to get rid of him completely. Maybe most people would like to understand it as the former, but with Chi Lie's character, he is sure it is the latter. After all, in his short quarter of life, he encountered similar situations, and the facts were more likely to be the latter.

If you can get a good deal, you'd be a fool not to take advantage of it. He picked up the twenty yuan, put it in his pocket, and walked to prepare for his meal and accommodation, but a car squeezed in at the intersection with difficulty.

The intersection was too narrow and there were piles of debris from various households, so the car couldn't get in and eventually got stuck at the intersection.

This was originally nothing to do with him, but perhaps because he was confused about the road ahead, anything could attract his attention. He stared at the car, the door opened, and a man got out.

Besides, he had just seen it.

It's Tang Shiqi.

The author has something to say:

I like comments very much and I will try my best to reply when I have time.

I hope you guys give me some attention.

Chapter 3 Getting His Touch

03

First came the people, then the suitcases, and then a few luggage bags, it looked like they were moving.

He didn't move. When Tang Shiqi came over dragging her suitcase, he met her eyes as if by chance.

" Teacher Tang, nice to see you again. "

Tang Shiqi also happened to look up, with a smile on her face just like before, but it was more genuine than before, and two dimples were faintly visible.

But he was bent over, as if he could not bear the weight of the suitcase in his hands.

If it was someone else carrying the suitcase, Chi Lie would have turned around and left without even a glance, but now it was Tang Shiqi who was carrying the suitcase, and it was the milky white ice cream melting on the back of his hand, and he couldn't just ignore it.

He rubbed his sweaty palms on the sides of his school uniform pants and planned to step forward to pick up the suitcase and be the kind-hearted person in Tang Shiqi's heart.

But after taking just one step, he had to stop.

Tang Shiqi in front of him had changed out of his training clothes and was wearing a white short-sleeved shirt made of cotton and linen, which was loose and thin.

The evening wind blew into the hem of his shirt from the intersection, made a circle, and carried the thin fabric up into the air.

The pants were high-waisted, covering some of the skin, but Chi Lie still saw the flash of abdominal muscles.

This person is studying dance. Although he looks slim, he actually has well-proportioned muscles, so he can draw smooth lines in his movements.

He swore that he was just trying to be a kind person, but who knew that this person was completely unaware of his attraction to him. The wind did not spare him, bringing out a flash of white, making him like a cheap puppet. He froze in place just after taking a step.

Tang Shiqi looked at him with confusion, " Classmate? What's wrong with you? Are you feeling unwell? "

He cleared his throat, rewound the gun, and walked up to Tang Shiqi. " Teacher Tang, do you live here? "

" Yeah! " Tang Shiqi's eyes lit up, as if she was looking forward to her new home. " It was renovated last month. I've been very busy, so I just moved in now. "

He asked Chi Lie again, " So you ... live here? "

Chi Lie nodded and took Tang Shiqi's suitcase calmly, not even daring to touch it with his nails. He said calmly, " Next door, I'll help you move it. You have a lot of things. "

Tang Shiqi looked down and saw that the thickness of their forearms was very different. It was getting dark and mosquitoes were coming. He was afraid of this and really shouldn't delay any longer.

So he readily agreed, " Then why don't you obey my order? I'll treat you to a meal some other day. "

He reached out and patted the back of Chi Lie's hand which was resting on the handle of the suitcase, intending to cheer him up and express his gratitude, but it disturbed Chi Lie's mind. Some people have sensitive areas behind their ears, some have sensitive areas on their necks. It was the first time that Chi Lie realized that the backs of his hands were sensitive. Ever since that drop of ice cream melted on the back of his hand, that piece of skin has become a forbidden place.

Can't touch it, and can't let others know.

He waited there and watched Tang Shiqi take out a shoulder bag from the back of the car and put it on her back, then pulled a suitcase over, walked past him, took out the key and opened the door.

Then she leaned over slightly, smiled apologetically, and made a " please " gesture with her side hand, motioning him to go in first.

The shoulder bag moved quietly as Tang Shiqi leaned over, and its weight wrinkled the cotton and linen fabric, sliding to her shoulder, revealing half of her clear and smooth collarbone.

Because it had just been squeezed by the strap of a shoulder bag, there were two shallow red indentations, pink and reddish, intersecting with the collarbone under the cover of the slightly transparent fabric.

But this person was unaware and invited Chi Lie to come in with a smile on his face.

The county town is already feeling the summer heat in May, and this year the temperature seems to be even higher, making Chi Lie's mouth dry and his tongue parched. As his name suggests, his heart is burning with anger .

He felt his throat getting dry and he swallowed to save himself. He looked away with difficulty and prayed to Jesus and Buddha before he finally focused his attention on his hands, picked up the suitcase and walked inside.

The summer evening breeze, relying on the sun that refused to set, rolled towards Tang Shiqi with hot steam, blocking his breathing, and mixed with an unnamed sweetness.

He walked in front and Tang Shiqi followed behind. After three trips back and forth, they finally delivered all the luggage to Tang Shiqi's new home.

The two were not far from each other throughout the whole process . Chi Lie's nerves were extremely tense. He didn't know what he was nervous about, but isn't it nervousness that makes one's heart beat faster?

When the move was finished, it was already dusk. Tang Shiqi took out an unopened bottle of mineral water from her shoulder bag, unscrewed it, handed it to Chi Lie, and thanked him with a smile, " Here, thank you. "

Chi Lie had been thirsty for a long time, so he avoided his fingers, took the water bottle and took a sip. When he wanted to screw the cap on, he found that the cap was still pinched by Tang Shiqi's fingertips.

Tang Shiqi was considerate enough to hand him the lid after he finished drinking, but Chi Lie didn't dare to take it.

He rubbed his palm on the side of his school uniform pants again, then stretched out his open palm and reached over. There was no need to touch it, just put the bottle cap over.

But Tang Shiqi was much more open than him. She did not avoid any contact. She raised her hand and put the bottle cap on him, lightly tapping his palm with the tips of her thumb and index finger, and then the bottle cap.

Chi Lie took a silent breath, raised the water bottle again and filled his mouth, then calmly screwed the bottle cap back in place.

Said: " Then I'll go first. "

Tang Shiqi looked embarrassed. " I'm sorry, I still have a lot to clean up, so I can't treat you to a meal for now. Tomorrow? The day after tomorrow? I'll contact you when I'm free, okay? "

Tang Shiqi was shorter than Chi Lie, with a smaller frame. His eyes looked particularly pitiful on his small face. Chi Lie didn't even bother to figure out what he said, and immediately agreed, " Okay. "

There was no reason to stay any longer, nor the willpower to stay any longer. Chi Lie turned around and tried to leave, but was stopped by Tang Shiqi. " Hey, classmate, wait a minute! What happened to your knee? "

Hearing this, Chi Lie looked down at his knees. Spots of blood seeped through the low-quality school uniform fabric, soaking it deep red.

" Sorry, did you bump into something while moving things just now? Sit down quickly. " As she said that, Tang Shiqi pushed Chi Lie to sit on the sofa.

Tang Shiqi has muscles in his arms. He studies dance and needs to provide support. His arm strength is not weak, but it is still not as good as Chi Lie's.

Chi Lie was previously a professionally trained basketball player. He has a taller frame than Tang Shiqi and stronger muscles. From behind, he can completely block Tang Shiqi.

Therefore, Tang Shiqi was able to successfully force Chi Lie to sit down, all thanks to the latter's conscious and voluntary action.

Tang Shiqi's face was filled with guilt and worry. " Where did I hit myself? Can you let me see? " As he said this, he squatted down and pretended to roll up Chi Lie's trouser legs, then looked up at Chi Lie, waiting for a consent, as if no one would have the heart to refuse him.

In fact, Chi Lie really couldn't say anything to refuse.

He looked at Tang Shiqi, who was half-kneeling in front of him with her head raised from between her knees, and felt a heat in her lower abdomen.

He began to hate himself, hated his youthful vigor at the age of nineteen, hated the heavy humidity of the summer air, but he could not hate the culprit in front of him.

Of course he would allow Tang Shiqi to look at his knees, even touch them, and more.

Chapter 4: Possessiveness towards him

04

" Will you let me see it? "

" Yeah. " Chi Lie agreed, but didn't ask him to get up, nor did he help him roll up his trouser legs. He didn't move at all as if his legs were in pain.

But in fact, he had no feeling at all. If Tang Shiqi hadn't discovered it, he might not have known it until the end of time.

Tang Shiqi carefully rolled up his trouser legs, one finger at a time, for fear that the fabric would scratch his knees. The process was so long that Chi Lie suffered a lot.

It's not pain, it's dryness.

Finally, the wound was exposed to the air. There was a fingernail-sized wound on the lower middle part of the knee. It was still bleeding and the surrounding area was red and swollen.

Tang Shiqi held his hands in the air, not daring to touch them, his brows furrowed as if he was in pain, " How did you bump into it? Was it because of the luggage you were carrying? "

No, but when Chi Lie says it, it can be.

Whether it was guilt or heartache, he hoped to have some connection with Tang Shiqi, and from his moral bottom line, using lies to fulfill his wish was a very low-cost method.

He hissed softly, pretending to be in pain, mixing truth with illusion, " Just now when I was moving my luggage, a puppy suddenly jumped out. I didn't want to step on it, so I dodged it and bumped into the wall. "

" You should have told me that. You shouldn't have wasted time. " He said with a look of distress again, " The puppy didn't do it on purpose, and neither did you. There's nothing you can do. You can only blame yourself for your bad luck. I'll go get the medicine box. "

There are actually people who speculate about what the puppy is thinking. Is it because it always gets along with children?

Chi Lie felt that Tang Shiqi was cute beyond her age. He smiled in his heart, but his face still showed an expression of enduring pain.

Flushing, disinfection, large Band-Aid, after finishing all this it was already dark, and Chi Lie no longer had any reason to stay. Tang Shiqi went out to see them off, with her hand still loosely supporting Chi Lie from behind.

Just half a step out of the courtyard gate, Chi Lie collided head-on with a figure like a cannonball. Both of them staggered back a few steps, and he was supported by Tang Shiqi. After a closer look, he found that this person was his classmate Jiang Zhi. He had only been transferred to the same school for a week, but the two of them had become enemies over various trivial matters. It was really a narrow road for enemies. But why did Jiang Zhi appear here?

Before he could ask, Jiang Zhi introduced himself.

" Cousin, why is he in our house? " Jiang Zhi looked disgusted, as if he was avoiding the plague god.

Chi Lie had no time to pay attention to Jiang Zhi's attitude. He only keenly caught the word " we " and subconsciously moved his body to block Tang Shiqi.

Although it was unreasonable, he had already included Tang Shiqi as his own meal.

Then he turned around and asked, " Teacher Tang, do you live together? "

Tang Shiqi didn't know what he was thinking, she just thought he was afraid of strangers breaking into his house, so she grabbed his arm and stood up, " It's okay, he's my brother, this place is close to the high school, he moved here to live for a while. "

So that's how it is. Chi Lie didn't think there was anything wrong with leaving now, and he thought he had made enough money today. But after seeing Jiang Zhi, he no longer thought so. He didn't think that their relationship was special. It was the weakest relationship in the world. He just wondered why a guy like Jiang Zhi could live and eat with Tang Shiqi, but he couldn't? He needed some reasons.

The weather in summer is as changeable as Chi Lie's temperament. A flash of white is followed by a thunder.

The three of them were attracted by the sky. They turned their heads to look at the dark clouds floating in the sky. Tang Shiqi's voice came from behind his ear, " I almost forgot that there will be a rainstorm tonight. Xiaozhi, please go home quickly. You should also go home quickly. Watch your knees. "

From the current angle, Tang Shiqi was standing behind Chi Lie, not far away . He might not know that his breath was the only coolness that Chi Lie could discern in the summer heat. Just saying this is enough to transfer the melted ice cream on the back of your hand to the skin behind your ear, staining it red.

Taking advantage of his back to Tang Shiqi, Chi Lie swallowed his saliva wantonly. Even the impending rain could not extinguish the fire in his heart.

He rarely had this feeling, or rather, he had never had this feeling before, but since he met Tang Shiqi, he felt strange all over.

He was clear about his sexual orientation and had been a man from the beginning to the end.

He had experienced the beginnings of love, but it had never been this feeling.

He once thought that he liked the former captain of the school team. They were of similar height and strength, and were the most tacit teammates and the best competitors.

It might be a very deep bond. He once thought it was love, but it was not until today that he realized the truth.

What I felt in the past could only be considered appreciation, admiration, friendship or so-called mutual understanding, but it was definitely not love.

Liking someone should be like this, unable to control your heartbeat, unable to control your breathing, unable to control your approach, yet afraid.

Afraid of being touched, afraid of being honest, wanting to hide, but afraid of not being able to leave after leaving.

Contradictory and pretentious.

The author has something to say:

My current number of followers seems to be 505 readers?

Then look forward to the arrival of No. 506 ! I will be the number you follow. If you like this article, please follow the author !

Chapter 5 His Arms

05

Finally, Chi Lie watched Jiang Zhi enter the gate, and the gate closed tightly around him after Tang Shiqi nodded goodbye to him.

He took two steps back and looked at the two adjacent doors on the left and right. He didn't want to go back to one of them, and he couldn't go back to the other. In short, neither of them was his home.

There was another thunder in the sky and sporadic raindrops fell. He raised his head and felt it with his skin, and suddenly found a reason to eat and live with Tang Shiqi.

Tang Shiqi would give tissues to strangers, easily let strangers into the house, apply medicine and bandages, make dinner appointments, and even guess the puppy's intentions.

Obviously, perhaps because of his identity as " Ya Ya's uncle " , Tang Shiqi is not very wary of him.

It is not without reason that kind people are bullied. Tang Shiqi's kindness is his opportunity. As to what level of " bullying " it is , it remains to be discussed.

At the moment, if a rainstorm fell and soaked him, Tang Shiqi would definitely take him in as a homeless student, right?

The weather in summer is so changeable that the accuracy of weather forecasts drops sharply, but this is not the case tonight. The predicted heavy rain arrived as expected.

The tiny raindrops grew bigger in just a few minutes, hitting the face with a strong feeling, and the coolness that penetrated the body could not be ignored.

The air, which was as hot as a steamer just now, suddenly cooled down. Chi Lie shivered unconsciously. The low-quality school uniform fabric stuck to his chest and back, making him feel cold and uncomfortable.

Chi Lie tilted his head back until his neck ached. Heavy raindrops covered him one after another until he was almost suffocated. Then he felt that it was about time.

He lifted up his wet bangs. It could be messy, but not ugly.

“ Boom boom boom— ”

He knocked on the door of Tang Shiqi's house, but no one responded. He took out his cell phone and looked at it. The screen was instantly blurred by the rain, but he could still see the time clearly.

It's already ten o'clock, Tang Shiqi might have gone to bed.

That's even better. A person who is half asleep is the most confused when he just wakes up, so it should be easy to agree to his request.

So he knocked harder.

It didn't take long, just three or two minutes before he heard the sound of a door opening and footsteps. He heard them clearly, even though there was thunder and lightning outside.

With a few creaks, the door was opened again. Before he could even see who was coming, an umbrella was already raised above his head.

It's Tang Shiqi.

This person is truly kind-hearted. He was not angry about being disturbed late at night. Instead, he immediately opened an umbrella without caring who the visitor was.

" Classmate, why are you here? Why don't you go home? " Tang Shiqi's voice was sticky, her eyes were half open, and the pajamas she was wearing still had fresh wrinkles.

Chi Lie was stunned. He only thought about the reason for entering the house, but forgot that he also had to explain the reason for not going home. The sticky voice was still tugging at his nerves, and he had no energy to think of another lie.

Tang Shiqi had thought about it for him, half-closed her eyes and looked up to see what was going on with him, " Did you have a conflict with your family? "

He went down the slope and said, " Yes, Mr. Tang, I only have 20 yuan in cash on me and I don't know where to go. "

It wasn't really a lie, after all, he only had the twenty yuan in cash that his cousin threw to him, even though few people spend cash nowadays and even though there were still seven zeros in his bank card.

A look of pity immediately appeared on Tang Shiqi's face. She squinted her eyes twice, took Chi Lie's wrist and led him into the door.

The door was closed, and even though Tang Shiqi was small, it was difficult for two grown men to fit under the umbrella. From the gate through the yard to the interior, the distance was four or five meters, and the two had to stand close together.

If he wasn't soaked, Chi Lie would have taken this opportunity to embrace Tang Shiqi and hold the umbrella for him.

But his current state was like a walking rainstorm. Even though he had already pushed his way under the umbrella, he did not have the heart to get the kind-hearted teacher Tang wet. The two walked quickly and it was only a few steps before they were inside. The rain had stopped and Tang Shiqi had put away her umbrella. Chi Lie's vision returned to normal and he looked up to find Jiang Zhi sitting in the living room playing games.

Tang Shiqi complained, "Xiao Zhi doesn't want to move when he's playing games. Just now when you knocked on the door, he woke me up and asked me to open it. If you had the time, you would have come in a long time ago."

Putting the umbrella aside, he added: "You got soaked like this, go take a shower, don't catch a cold and miss school."

Jiang Zhi didn't even raise his head, his eyes fixed on the phone screen, "He missed school? He either skipped classes or slept all day, and it's hard for him to get a single-digit score on the test."

got more and more excited as he talked. "You know what happened to my cousin? He got zero in all his subjects at the beginning of the month. It made me laugh to death. He must be mentally retarded."

"Jiang Zhi!" Tang Shiqi's voice was unusually loud, but he was still confused and had no deterrent effect. Jiang Zhi raised his eyebrows and continued playing the game.

He had no choice but to apologize to Chi Lie, "I'm sorry, classmate, he is in his rebellious period, please ignore him, go take a shower first, I'll find you some clothes to wear."

Chi Lie nodded in agreement. He wanted to leave a good impression on Teacher Tang, otherwise Jiang Zhi would have been bruised and battered.

He followed Tang Shiqi's instructions and went to the bathroom to take a shower. It was a rare and happy thing to get what he wanted, but Jiang Zhi ruined his mood.

Jiang Zhi was sitting in front of him. That day, he was sleepy in class and was not paying attention, so he accidentally spilled the milk tea on Jiang Zhi. The range was good, and Jiang Zhi's school uniform and schoolbag were all damaged.

The boy might have some mysophobia, and he immediately stood up and overturned his desk, causing his books to fall to the ground and inevitably be soaked by the milk tea.

Without even waiting, he could imagine how sticky and smelly the books would feel after drying.

As you can imagine, they started fighting, but from the first strike it became a one-sided suppression by him, and he was then pulled apart by the teacher who rushed over.

This is how the feud between the two began.

The bathroom was simple and not very big, and there was no curtain in the shower room. In summer, showers are quick, and Chi Lie stood in the bathroom for a long time before finally hearing a knock on the door.

"Classmate, are you done washing? Open the door and take the clothes."

Chi Lie walked over and opened the door a tiny crack. Immediately, a thin white arm stretched out its arm, holding a stack of white cloth.

"Classmate, Xiaozhi doesn't like others touching his things. These are my loose clothes. Please make do with them for now, okay?"

Chi Lie did not take it immediately. He simply rummaged through the pile of cloth while admiring the moonlight that peeked in.

Tang Shiqi asked outside in confusion: " Classmate? "

Chi Lie came back to his senses and said calmly: " Teacher Tang, it seems that you don't have any underwear. "

Then, he saw the fingertips pinching the clothes tightened instantly, revealing a slight shyness.

The author has something to say:

The title "He who got wet" refers to two people and has many meanings.

Even if the current chapter is referring to Chi Lie, there will also be chapters referring to Teacher Tang. As for what will get Teacher Tang wet, it is still unknown.

(ps : I also want to comment today (o ㄟ o?))

Chapter 6 He is like a fruit candy

06

" Teacher Tang, it seems that you don't have any underwear. "

" Ah, ah ... this ..." Tang Shiqi's skin is so white that even the color of his arms shows his shyness. He pulled his arms back as if he was burned by the mist in the bathroom.

When he pulled it back, he accidentally hit the door, and the door, which was already open a little, turned and opened at least half a person's width.

So Chi Lie was exposed in front of him.

When their eyes met, the shock on Tang Shiqi's face was obvious, and she must have woken up completely from her sleepiness.

Perhaps to ease the embarrassment, he chose to continue talking, his eyes wandering, smiling awkwardly, " It seems ... mine ... doesn't seem to fit you. "

This made Chi Lie laugh from the bottom of his heart. He did not close the door with his hand, but generously allowed the visitors to come in. " Really? Then what should we do, Mr. Tang? "

Tang Shiqi was a little embarrassed, and looked down at her toes, but she insisted on her duty as a teacher, teaching and answering questions for her students. " Well, well, why don't you just hang the crotchless one, and I'll buy you one tomorrow, okay? "

Actually, there is nothing wrong with two men talking about these things, it's just that they are not familiar with each other, and it is a bit sudden for them to be so frank all of a sudden.

This is a new side of Tang Shiqi. Chi Lie is very happy to see it, but he doesn't dare to look at it any longer. After all, his current state is too easy to be exposed.

He took the suit, let Tang Shiqi go, and let himself go, " Okay, thank you, Teacher Tang. "

Then he closed the door. The moment the door closed, he heard Tang Shiqi let out a sigh of relief, and then he shook his head and smiled unconsciously.

He walked back to the shower head, turned the temperature knob to cold water, and poured it over his head, but he couldn't control his brain.

Tang Shiqi's forearms sticking out from her loose pajamas, her toes curled up in embarrassment, her red ears, her sticky voice, and the warmth of an umbrella held out from the rain.

He felt that Tang Shiqi was like a piece of hard candy that had been melted by the rain. The sugar threads were wrapped around his heart, making it suffocating and unbearable, but he enjoyed it.

It would not be good to delay too long, so he calmed down and put on his clothes to go out. Although Tang Shiqi had said that they were loose clothes, he still felt a little tight, especially in some parts, which lacked restriction.

He had no choice but to pull his shirt down to cover it up before walking out. The sound of Tang Shiqi and Jiang Zhi talking could be heard.

Tang Shiqi pleaded in a soft voice, "Xiao Zhi, you two are classmates, so please accommodate me and live together, just for one night."

Jiang Zhi obviously didn't buy it. "My mom doesn't let me play with idiots. I'm afraid he'll infect me."

"Xiao Zhi, don't be so rude. Grades can't be the basis for you to judge a person."

"I don't care. I can't stand sleeping in the same room with someone else."

Tang Shiqi seemed a little embarrassed. After hesitating for a while, he finally managed to say, "What should I do? This is so embarrassing ..."

Chi Lie, who was eavesdropping, knew why Tang Shiqi was embarrassed. He walked out, feeling extremely relieved, "Teacher Tang, I'm done."

The two cousins turned around and saw Chi Lie holding up the hem of his shirt in embarrassment. Jiang Zhi sneered, "Wow, Marilyn Monroe."

Then he started to make arrangements, "You sleep in that room, and my brother and I will sleep in the same room."

Chi Lie didn't expect to have the good fortune of sleeping with Tang Shiqi, but he didn't want Jiang Zhi to take advantage of him, even though he knew they were cousins.

So he pretended to be wronged, "Didn't you say you couldn't stand being with others? I overheard some of it. Jiang, don't you just don't want to be with me? Why ..."

Jiang Zhi's expression was distorted, as if he had eaten a fly. "Fuck, you have the nerve to ask me why? Classmate Jiang, stop pretending!"

Seeing that Jiang Zhi was about to take action, Tang Shiqi quickly tried to smooth things over, looking at Chi Lie, "Okay, okay, it's too late, go to bed. Xiao Zhi is a bit of a germaphobe, so he sleeps alone. I, I ... will sleep with you."

"Cousin?" Jiang Zhi was incredulous. "Why are you so ungrateful? I'm telling you this ..."

"Xiao Zhi!" Tang Shiqi frowned and glared at him, "You are rude. Go back to your room and sleep."

Jiang Zhi was furious, but he still listened to Tang Shiqi's words. He just kicked the chair and slammed the door loudly.

Chi Lie raised an eyebrow and looked at Jiang Zhi's angry back. He intuitively felt that he would win the first prize in the lottery today.

The door to the master bedroom was open, and he could clearly see that there was only one bed inside, and it was not wide.

He swore that he had not planned to this point. He was just aroused by Jiang Zhi's inexplicable desire to win and possess. But if a pie falls from the sky, it would be a waste not to take it.

He made an apologetic expression, " Teacher Tang, I'm sorry to trouble you. "

" No, no. " Tang Shiqi raised his hands to his chest and shook them, his face full of apology. He felt sorry for Jiang Zhi. " Xiao Zhi just has a quick temper, but he doesn't have a bad heart. "

At this time, Chi Lie successfully established his good image and was very generous. " It's okay, it's too late, let's go to bed. "

After saying this, Chi Lie felt inexplicably happy, as if he had gotten what he wanted, as if he and Tang Shiqi were close lovers.

Tang Shiqi agreed, stretched out his hand and yawned, rubbed the tears from the corners of his eyes, and walked towards the master bedroom in slippers.

He had a small frame and small feet. He wore soft, thick-soled slippers, with his trouser legs falling below his ankles, and his ankles were barely visible as he walked .

Chi Lie followed the man with his gaze, long forgetting that he should cover some parts of his body with the hem of his shirt. After Tang Shiqi sat on the bed for a long time, he finally remembered to look up.

What catches your eye are the rosy ears and cheeks.

Tang Shiqi tilted her head and scratched behind her ear with her fingertips. " You should lie down and cover yourself with a blanket. I'll go buy some tomorrow morning. "

Although Chi Lie lived next door, he really couldn't go there to ask for help in getting underwear. Chi Lie had a conflict with his family, so this was the only way.

Chi Lie sat on the bed helplessly, lifted his legs and tucked them into the quilt, " Sorry, I didn't notice. "

Tang Shiqi didn't continue the topic and walked to the door. " Then I'll turn off the lights? "

This sentence sounded like a useless greeting. Tang Shiqi just said it, and before he finished speaking, his finger had already touched the wall switch.

" etc. "

When Tang Shiqi heard the response, she turned off the light, took two steps and then slowly came back. Chi Lie did not agree to turn off the light, so she took small steps back and turned it on again.

He felt a little apologetic. The sudden change from dark to bright made him squint his eyes, and his lower eyelashes were a little wet. He smiled, " I'm a little confused because I didn't get enough sleep. Forgive me. Is there anything else? "

Chi Lie was also a kind person and told him, " Teacher Tang, the right shoulder of your pajamas is wet by the rain. Please change. "

He just noticed when he saw Tang Shiqi turning off the light that the thin pajamas on his right shoulder where the shoulder blade was connected was slightly wet and stuck to his skin.

Tang Shiqi's pajamas were light gray in color, and became somewhat transparent after getting wet, allowing one to see the clear outline of her bones extending to the depression in her spine. Unfortunately, only a small piece of fabric was wet, and the rest was hidden in the light-colored pajamas, which aroused curiosity but was irresponsible.

Tang Shiqi turned around to look and saw that it was indeed wet. When he was sweating while practicing dancing, his clothes would inevitably get wet like this. He was so used to this feeling that he didn't notice it.

He felt a little embarrassed that he didn't even notice his clothes were wet, so he quickly walked to the closet and took out some clothes to change into instead of pajamas.

At the moment he was confused, embarrassed and unguarded, so he didn't think much about it, nor did he think there was anything wrong with men changing clothes, especially since the man was in the same class as his brother.

Teacher Tang is still too kind. He doesn't know that a high school student's mind can be very complicated, even dirty.

The author has something to say:

I really like the atmosphere of tension between them. I get so involved in it once I start writing it, so I may have written it in a bit too much detail.

But when I went back to revise the article, I couldn't bear to delete any sentence. I hope you can accept this writing style and rhythm.

grateful

?_?

Chapter 7 His Back

07

Tang Shiqi faced the wardrobe with her back to Chi Lie.

Chi Lie's eyes never left Tang Shiqi from beginning to end. After all, he could only watch now.

Be it addiction or desire, at the moment he can only vent it through his eyes and words.

This is far from enough.

He didn't know if these superficial ways of releasing his desire would lead to a buildup of greed, which would then suddenly explode one day. He didn't intend to find out.

Life is short, he doesn't understand, doesn't want, and can't restrain himself.

He looked at Tang Shiqi standing in front of the closet, who had just finished searching and was unbuttoning a string of buttons in front of her.

So he, who had always disdained planning, had a dream. If this was Tang Shiqi's habit of changing clothes, then he wanted to become a wardrobe and have the kind of styles that would be bought by Tang Shiqi.

Maybe he was sleepy again, Tang Shiqi was very slow in unbuttoning his clothes, so slow that he wanted to help him out of an insult.

But it was just a thought. The love that suddenly sprouted in his heart within a day actually gave rise to pity. He was surprised that he was reluctant to offend Tang Shiqi.

He had never been reluctant to give up anything before.

Finally, the collar was flattened and slid down the back, allowing Chi Lie to appreciate the narrow waist that had been hidden in the shirt, as if it could be held with just his hands.

He clenched his palms weakly, and the feeling of emptiness forced him to grab the corner of the quilt to fill it.

The bedroom ceiling light was switched on quickly because of the quick switch just now, and it was a warm light yellow, which sprinkled on Tang Shiqi's skin, making it look more and more like milky white ice cream.

In his mind, there are only two endings for ice cream: being eaten or being melted.

Tang Shiqi seems to like light colors very much. The colors of her wardrobe and the clothes inside are very light, just like her temperament.

He took out a white vest that he used to wear. It was so loose that it could barely be used as pajamas. He suddenly stopped halfway through putting it on and turned around. " Classmate, can you help me get a towel? I forgot to wipe it. "

Of course, Chi Lie nodded, blinked to calm his eyes, turned and walked towards the bathroom which was closer to him. There was a towel hanging neatly next to the sink, it was very white and looked very soft.

He found that everything he saw today looked like Tang Shiqi.

Shaking his head, he pinched a corner and pulled it down, not daring to touch it any further. He leaned his head out and asked, " Teacher Tang, is this the one? "

Tang Shiqi turned around to look, his eyelids were already drooping, and nodded slowly, so Chi Lie had no choice but to let him go.

Walking behind him, Chi Lie turned his head away from his sight and reached out to hand him a towel, but Tang Shiqi did not turn around to take it.

He felt strange and turned his head back to the front as calmly as possible, then moved forward and found that Tang Shiqi's arms were restrained in a half-put on vest and her eyes were closed. Standing ... asleep?

He smiled helplessly, then stepped behind Tang Shiqi and patted his shoulder through the towel, " Teacher Tang, I got the towel back. "

Tang Shiqi shrugged his shoulders , blinked his eyes, and was stunned for a moment, as if he just realized that he had just fallen asleep. After reacting, he immediately pretended to put on his clothes.

Seeing this, Chi Lie reached out and pressed Tang Shiqi's right shoulder again through the towel, " Teacher Tang, you haven't wiped it yet, it's still wet. "

Tang Shiqi hummed a sound from her nose as a response, and then she didn't move. She didn't continue to put on her clothes, nor did she take the towel.

His arms were still in his vest, obviously asking Chi Lie to help wipe them.

Tang Shiqi was half asleep and was only thinking about what to do. However, Chi Lie became extremely nervous. He hesitated for a while and controlled the towel to move it around Tang Shiqi's shoulders.

The towel was too soft and not very thick, so his palm could clearly feel the shape of the bones under his hand.

The shoulders and shoulder blades had a gentle protruding curve, but his eyes couldn't help but drift to the depression in the middle of the back, from top to bottom.

He found that there were two moles on Tang Shiqi's back, a shallow bruise near the waist, and no dimples.

In the midst of intoxication, Tang Shiqi's sleepy voice came, " Is it so wet? "

He was startled, and then he realized that his hands had already followed his heart and slid from his shoulders to his waist. " Well, it's all wet. Now wipe it clean. "

Tang Shiqi didn't think much about it, nodded, propped up his arms to put on his vest, and walked towards the bed with a somewhat unsteady step.

Chi Lie didn't notice any of this, he only saw the hem of Tang Shiqi's shirt.

The loose fabric piled up at Tang Shiqi's waist and failed to fall down smoothly because Tang Shiqi's hips prevented him from falling.

He was so focused on his waist and back that he didn't notice that Tang Shiqi's lower body was just as strong as her upper body.

Through the light and the thin pajamas, two legs are straight and slender, with muscles in the right position and weight, even ... the buttocks are no exception.

He kept looking until the piled hem was hidden under the quilt, then he forced himself to close his eyes and relax.

I sighed secretly and prepared to go to bed, but I found that Tang Shiqi sat up again, looking very annoyed and a little aggrieved, " I forgot to turn off the light again, my brain is really ..."

Chi Lie's heart skipped a beat and he tried to stop him from getting out of bed. " Teacher Tang, I'll turn it off. You just stay on the bed. "

Chi Lie was not sleepy at all. He turned off the lights and got into bed much more skillfully than Tang Shiqi. He also had good eyesight. After waiting for a few seconds, he was able to see the layout of the room clearly in the moonlight and lay down on the bed smoothly.

It was quiet at night. With the doors and windows closed, apart from the thunder, the sound of rain seemed to be isolated a hundred miles away, so even the sound of breathing could be clearly heard.

Although it was dark and we didn't touch each other, the feeling of having another person sleeping next to us was very obvious.

The mattress and bedding were softer than those at his cousin's house, a bit like his original bedroom in the capital, and he felt extremely comfortable.

He could feel a slight depression on the right side, and could also hear that Tang Shiqi was not asleep yet.

From the time he took the towel until now, he had accumulated too many secrets. He thought he could hold them together for at least a month or two, but he didn't expect that he couldn't even bear it for ten minutes.

He had to free himself, but unfortunately he could only do so through words, words without any substance. " Teacher Tang, why aren't you sleeping when you are so sleepy? "

Tang Shiqi turned over, closed his eyes, and held the words in his throat, " Xiao Zhi has a good heart, don't blame him ..."

It turns out that you are worried about your younger brother. When can you also think about your younger brother?

He was not happy and wanted to grab Tang Shiqi's attention. " Teacher Tang, Jiang is right. I did get zero points in six subjects. "

Because he had just arrived in the small county and was not used to sleeping, he used the exam to make up for the sleep. But he did not say these reasons.

" It's okay. " Tang Shiqi's voice was not loud. " You may not like it. I feel that you are very suitable for sports, but Xiaozhi is not suitable for this. "

Just these two sentences were not enough to relieve Chi Lie, so he continued to ask: " Why does Teacher Tang think I am suitable for sports? "

Tang Shiqi's answer brought all his release back to square one. " Because I saw your body. "

The author has something to say:

I want a starfish.

Chapter 8 His Breath

08

Chi Lie had seen drunk people before, but this was the first time he had seen someone who was drunk and sleepy.

He wanted to share his feelings that had nowhere to go on Tang Shiqi, but Tang Shiqi shot them all down, causing a stir again.

He swallowed, but it was so dry that there was nothing to swallow. " Teacher Tang, do you know what you are saying? "

Tang Shiqi was silent for a while, then spoke in a whisper, " The truth. "

Chi Lie took a deep breath, turned to the other side, " Go to sleep, Teacher Tang, don't talk. "

The breathing behind him gradually became steady , but he was still muttering, " Classmate, don't blame Xiao Zhi ..."

Chi Lie felt uncomfortable after hearing this. While Tang Shiqi was still not fully conscious, he said in a muffled voice, " Teacher Tang, don't always call me classmate. My name is Chi Lie. "

Tang Shiqi happened to turn over and hummed in her sleep, " Hmm ... Chi Lie. "

When Student Chi was called, he once again felt what it meant to be a disaster for one's own good. After hypnotizing himself for a long time, he finally sneaked to the bathroom to take a shower.

He felt that Tang Shiqi must be a straight man. If he was a little bit gay, he wouldn't be able to arouse people's hearts like he did tonight.

Every gesture is normal, but if every gesture is seductive, such person is the most terrifying.

The next morning, when Chi Lie woke up, there was a set of sportswear and underwear beside him.

He felt that Tang Shiqi's financial situation was not bad, as evidenced by her car, decoration, and the new clothes she bought for strangers.

Yesterday I was so focused on Tang Shiqi that I forgot about my surroundings.

This is a very ordinary small county town. When you go out, you can see bungalows everywhere. Two-story buildings are high-end buildings, and four-story high schools are top-level buildings.

Here, attending classes is for learning. Anything else, whether it is sports or dance, is considered not doing your job properly.

No one would open a cram school just to make money, and decorate it so exquisitely and look so good.

He felt from the bottom of his heart that the climate and soil here could not support someone like Tang Shiqi, so this person either came here to experience life.

Or you might be like him and have to hide in this small place.

The phone was on the bedside table, and he took it. There were three or two messages from his cousin. She asked him where he was and whether he would come back. He replied that he was staying at a friend's house.

People around him have never been worried about his disappearance. Everyone knows that he will never treat himself badly no matter what he does, and they also think that he is capable of doing anything.

He reached out and touched his side, but found that it was no longer warm. He had no choice but to change his clothes and start a new day of doing nothing.

As per his habit, he walked towards the bathroom. When he opened the door, he saw a figure squatting on the ground, holding a wet blue cloth in his hand. It was his school uniform pants. The bathroom was narrow, with the window at the end open. The summer breeze blew in and occasionally blew up the hem of Tang Shiqi's clothes. Chi Lie stood at the door for a long time. As far as he can remember, the only destinations for his dirty clothes are the washing machine and his own hands. No one has ever washed his clothes for him, not even his mother. In his mind, having someone help him wash his clothes is a luxury.

Until Tang Shiqi noticed his presence, " Classmate? There is blood on your pants. You need to wash it quickly. The sky has cleared up now. Do you mind? "

He wanted to say of course he didn't mind and thank her again, but suddenly he remembered that he had changed out of more than one piece of clothes yesterday. He leaned against the door, his voice still hoarse from the morning, " Teacher Tang, where are my underwear? I washed them after taking a shower yesterday. "

Tang Shiqi pointed in a direction, her hands were covered with foam, " It's still there. Take it to the clothes hanger outside to dry it. I haven't touched it. " Within a second after saying that, she immediately buried her head in rubbing the school uniform in her hands, and a blush spread behind her ears again.

Chi Lie was satisfied with his reaction. He walked over and took it, but felt it was not enough. "

Teacher Tang, what you bought is a bit small. It's uncomfortable to wear. " He told the truth.

Tang Shiqi stopped what he was doing for a while and cleared his throat as if to cover up something. He didn't think Chi Lie had any bad intentions, he just thought he was thinking too much. After all, Chi Lie was still a student.

He shook off the foam on his hands, " I'll talk to my family after school today to resolve the conflict. For now, I'll just make do with it. I didn't check the size correctly. "

" Yes. " Chi Lie said calmly, " I only saw it for a second or two yesterday. It's normal that I can't see it clearly. "

Tang Shiqi's ears suddenly turned red. Chi Lie's tone was too natural. He always had a filter for the identity of " student " and still didn't think there was anything wrong with Chi Lie's words.

He just felt that he was too offensive. He broke the door yesterday and saw something he shouldn't have seen.

I changed the subject awkwardly, " How is your knee? I forgot to tell you yesterday not to touch the water. Are you okay? "

Chi Lie paused as he was about to leave. He had forgotten about this and was unable to answer the question. " I'll hang up first and check later. "

He hung his clothes on the drying rack, bent down and rolled up his trouser legs above his knees.

It was not a serious abrasion. Even though it got wet twice yesterday, a fragile blood scab had formed on its own.

He felt that he had been cheated, and he still wanted Tang Shiqi to apply medicine to him, with those gentle movements and tone, and he wanted it to happen again.

So he unceremoniously took a tissue from the living room, put it on his knees, pressed his palm, and then grabbed it violently.

Warm blood flowed out of the wound again. He took a tissue and wet it a little. Combined with the bruises around it that turned purple, the word "pain" could finally be described.

He returned to Tang Shiqi's bedroom and walked into the bathroom again. " Teacher Tang, this is what happened when I took off the Band-Aid. It hurts a little when I walk. "

Tang Shiqi was putting her school uniform pants into the washing machine to dry. Upon hearing this, she looked at his knees, immediately washed her hands, ran over, and pushed him out.

She pushed him to sit on the bed, then went to the living room to get the medicine box. She crouched down like she did yesterday. This time, there was a carpet beside the bed, and Tang Shiqi knelt directly in front of him.

Tang Shiqi doesn't have any aversion to the floor. Usually in the dance studio, when everyone is tired, they just sit on the floor and no one thinks it's a big deal.

Chi Lie leaned his arms back on the bed, tilted his head back, closed his eyes, and felt it.

Maybe because of dancing practice, Tang Shiqi's fingertips are not as soft as his body, and his knees can feel the scratches of calluses.

He couldn't help but open his eyes to see that Tang Shiqi was applying medicine to him little by little with a cotton swab. He was very focused and occasionally got close enough to feel the warmth of Tang Shiqi's breath.

He watched Tang Shiqi busying himself, lowering and raising his head, his hands moving carefully.

Just as he was staring at it, Tang Shiqi suddenly raised his head, his eyes a little confused, " Does it ... hurt? "

Only then did he realize that he had placed his hand on the back of Tang Shiqi's head without knowing when. If Tang Shiqi had looked up a second later, he was not sure what he would have done.

He did not suppress the tangled desires within him, but he did take care not to let his inner feelings show through outwardly.

Now it seems that it has failed.

Facing Tang Shiqi, he seemed unable to control himself.

Chapter 9 Wanting His Mercy

09

Teacher Tang was a kind person, and he always gave him a way out. He continued, " Yes, it hurts. "

The confusion in Tang Shiqi's eyes turned into a smile, and he said helplessly: " You are just like me, you like to grab things when you are in pain, but please don't grab my hair. "

" Sorry. " He raised his hand and helped Tang Shiqi tidy up the hair on the back of her head.

Tang Shiqi put a band-aid on his wound and knelt on the ground to organize the medicine box. " Classmate, it's almost time. Your legs are not convenient. Can I take you there? I also need to take Xiaozhi there. "

Chi Lie didn't say yes or no, he just corrected, " Teacher Tang, we agreed last night that you should call me by my name. "

" Really? " Tang Shiqi blinked and smiled sheepishly, " I'm sorry, I go to bed early at night, and I will be very groggy if I don't sleep after the time. "

" Chi Lie, I'll take you to school. " He repeated with a smile.

In the car, the passenger seat was empty. Chi Lie and Jiang Zhi sat in the back seat, turning to the windows on their respective sides.

Chi Lie looked out the car window bored. In just one week, he had seen the entire small county town and was tired of it. The view from the car window did not make any difference.

So he turned around and looked at Tang Shiqi's back. This was the most refreshing thing for him at the moment, and he didn't think he would get tired of it.

From his angle, he could only see a narrow side view, and the most worth seeing part was the ear. He had seen this ear with a pink tint, but he was insatiable in wanting to see it with a bloody red tint.

The air conditioner in the car was turned down low, so the burning sensation was too obvious. He saw Tang Shiqi glance at the rearview mirror and then asked, " Have you contacted your family? "

He nodded.

" Talk it over when you get home tonight. No matter what the misunderstanding is, how can parents have the heart to really blame their own children? " Tang Shiqi counselled in a gentle voice.

He did not nod. He thought that there were two mistakes in Teacher Tang's words. First, some parents would never understand their children. Second, " They are not my parents. I am just staying at my relatives' house. "

Then he looked through the rearview mirror and saw Tang Shiqi's frowning brows, worried or pitying him. This was normal, no matter what the reason, children whose parents were not around were always pitiful.

Perhaps people with strong self-esteem would not want to be pitied by others, but Chi Lie is not like that. He is happy to accept Tang Shiqi's pity, and the more the better.

" Alas. " Tang Shiqi sighed, " We are neighbors anyway, so come and see me anytime if you have any problems in the future. "

Chi Lie pretended to be serious, " How can I do that? I have already troubled Teacher Tang. How much is this dress? I will save up the money and pay you back. "

He is just a poor high school student with twenty dollars in cash. What bad intentions could he have?

He was so absorbed in his acting that he almost forgot there was a third person sitting next to him, a third person who knew his true identity.

Jiang Zhi looked at him with disgust. " Huh? Saving money? Don't they say you are a rich second generation? "

Chi Lie: " " He was so angry that he decided secretly that he must find another reason to teach Jiang Zhi a lesson.

Just as he was trying to find an excuse, Tang Shiqi spoke first, " Xiao Zhi! You should be more careful with your words and don't just believe whatever gossip others tell you. "

Then she apologized to him, " Chi Lie, don't be angry. If you have any problem, just come to me. The clothes are my gift to you. "

Chi Lie nodded very sensibly, and he even smiled at Jiang Zhi, " I won't be angry, Jiang is just outspoken and has a good personality. "

Jiang Zhi obviously didn't understand his behavior. He leaned against the car door, crossed his arms over his chest, and kept rubbing his goose bumps. He deeply suspected that someone had taken advantage of Chi Lie.

The county town is not big, and there are few vehicles on the streets during the morning school hours. I arrived at the high school gate in a blink of an eye.

On the way, Tang Shiqi bought them some hand-pulled pancakes and soy milk for breakfast, and asked them to eat before getting off the car. She also bought herself a cup of unsweetened soy milk.

He asked casually: " Chi Lie, Yaya called you ... uncle, right? "

Chi Lie still had something in his mouth and simply hummed.

Tang Shiqi didn't want to be considered nosy, but she was still a little worried. Chi Lie and Jiang Zhi were classmates, and as a teacher, Tang Shiqi had a natural tolerance and love for Chi Lie.

" So, are you living at your sister's house? "

Chi Lie swallowed the food in his mouth, " Well, cousin, we don't get along very well. "

His cousin was impatient and had a sharp tongue. Although she was not a bad person, her words were always unpleasant to the ear. He felt that his cousin was very similar to his parents. They both liked to act arbitrarily from the perspective of the elders, and they always ignored and did not recognize the sufferings of the younger generation.

This is being pretentious. To put it simply, there is a generation gap.

" Oh, I see. You and Xiaozhi should take care of each other at school. If you have any problems, don't be shy, just come to me. " He also regarded Chi Lie as his own younger brother.

The two people in the back seat were eating voraciously and had finished while chatting. Seeing that it was time for class, they opened the car doors and got out.

One walked on the far left, and the other walked on the far right. Anyway, they didn't look like they had just got off a car.

Chi Lie was too lazy to pay attention to all this and walked forward as usual. As soon as he stepped into the school gate, he was stopped by the security guard.

" Hey, hey, hey, stop! I'm talking to you, why aren't you wearing your school uniform? " The old man put out his cigarette, patted his body and came out.

At this time, Jiang Zhi had already entered the door smoothly and cast a provocative and contemptuous look at Chi Lie, but Chi Lie was too lazy to pay attention to him.

Because Tang Shiqi just told him not to be angry.

Their high school has strict management, and they have a holiday every two weeks, and can only not wear school uniforms on Saturdays and Sundays. However, since the guards take turns, being caught violating the rules is more a matter of luck.

Chi Lie had the bad luck to meet the captain of the guard team.

He was familiar with the violation of discipline and did not make up stories, " It got wet after the rain, and it's not dry yet after washing. "

But the old man didn't believe it. " There are more than 4,000 people in the school, how come no one got wet in the rain? It rained all night last night, why didn't you go home so late? "

It was that feeling again, all his suffering and reasons being ignored, and he was being bossed around according to the " elders' thinking " . He hated being pointed at and meddled in like this the most.

The old man kept on talking, " Ask parents to send school uniforms, otherwise they will not be allowed to enter the school gate. "

This was not a big problem for Chi Lie. As usual, he would just turn around and leave. He had no interest in this high school.

As soon as he turned his body to an angle, he changed his mind.

Tang Shiqi not only told him not to be angry, but also told him to come to him if he had any problems.

Now that he is in trouble, it is not too much to ask the kind and beautiful teacher Tang for help, right?

The author has something to say:

I asked many people to design the pictures for Xiaochi and Teacher Tang. One came out today. You can go to Weibo to see it~

Chapter 10 Be bolder with him

10

He looked behind him and saw that Tang Shiqi's car was still parked there, so he replied to the security guard in a brisk tone, " I'll ask my parents to talk to you. "

He turned back to the roadside and approached Tang Shiqi's car, the window was slowly lowered. He pretended to be embarrassed, " Teacher Tang, he won't let me in without a school uniform, can you explain it to me? "

" No problem. " Tang Shiqi unbuckled her seat belt, took out a bottle of mineral water from her bag, and stuffed it into Chi Lie's hand when she got out of the car. " I see you didn't bring any water. "

He didn't just bring water, he didn't even bring his schoolbag.

The mineral water carried the temperature of the car's air conditioner. Tang Shiqi held the bottle in his hand. Her cool fingertips touched his palm, then broke away in an instant, leaving only a touch that was lower than his body temperature and lingered for a long time.

Tang Shiqi had already reached the school gate. He quickly put a bottle of mineral water on his forehead to wake himself up and quickly followed. The guard had already accepted the parents' explanation and motioned for him to go in.

Tang Shiqi was planning to retire, but when he turned around, his wrist was restrained. He had no choice but to turn around with the force, " What's wrong? "

Chi Lie let go immediately. He didn't know what happened to him. Seeing Tang Shiqi was about to leave, he subconsciously grabbed her. He felt that he was a little bolder, at least he dared to touch her with his hand.

The bell for class rang behind him, like a death warrant, urging him to say something without thinking, " Teacher Tang, add me on WeChat before you leave. "

It may be a little offensive, but all his impulses and subconsciousness were not spur-of-the-moment thoughts. He had a lot of ideas in his mind, but he was reluctant to put them into practice, or in other words, he was reluctant to put them into practice on Tang Shiqi.

When you are anxious, you are exposed.

He had long wanted Teacher Tang's WeChat account. After all, it would allow him to get a glimpse into Teacher Tang's past and learn more about her.

" Okay. " Tang Shiqi agreed to his request again, took out his mobile phone from his pocket and showed the QR code.

The adding activity of the two people went smoothly. When they looked up from their mobile phone screens, they found that the security guard was looking at them with his hands on his hips, and his face seemed to be older than before.

Grandpa: " The parents don't have WeChat with their children? And they are at the school gate! Under my nose! Take the phone!?" "

Chi Lie then remembered that cell phones were not allowed in this school. He had only been transferred to this school a week ago and had always been unscrupulous, so he had not thought about it for a moment.

But he was also familiar with being caught in violation of discipline, not to mention that he now had the support of his " parents " . " Uncle, my brother bought me a new phone yesterday, and I didn't have time to add WeChat. "

The old man was skeptical, but he didn't want to delay the students' class. " Okay, okay, let's go to class. I'll confiscate your phone. Remember to take it away after school. Don't let me see it again. "

The old man pretended to take the phone from him, and Chi Lie dodged for a moment, " My brother is here, can't he take it home? "

The old man clicked his tongue and said, " Then just give it to him! You are still wasting time here during class . "

According to his usual personality, Chi Lie should have started to argue with the old man at this time, but with Tang Shiqi here, he was able to suppress his temper, and he did it naturally.

To him, Tang Shiqi is like the shade of trees, the breeze, and ice water in the summer. In short, as long as you stay around him, you will feel comfortable and have no temper.

He handed the phone to Tang Shiqi, leaned over with his back to the guard and whispered to her ear, " Teacher Tang, please hold it for me. I'll come back to get it tonight, okay? "

Then he stood up and waited for Tang Shiqi's answer, and was completely sure that he was indeed bold enough to whisper to Teacher Tang at close range.

Tang Shiqi nodded, not noticing anything strange, " Hurry up and go to class. "

The bell for class rang long ago, and now it was time for the boring morning self-study class. Chi Lie had only attended the class once since he arrived. Rather than being late for class and being the center of attention , he obviously preferred to wander around the campus.

But today was different. Tang Shiqi told him to go to class. He must have nodded, so he decided to go to the classroom.

But he felt that this was a big problem, because he had no doubt that he would nod to whatever Tang Shiqi said in the future. Fortunately, it was fair, considering the current situation, Tang Shiqi never refused anything he said.

He suddenly wanted to know where the bottom line of this obedience was. If he asked for a hug, a kiss, a touch, would he be allowed?

How can I get permission?

With such doubts, Chi Lie made a plan in his mind. Although he guessed that Tang Shiqi was a straight man, he still needed to confirm it. This was crucial to his subsequent strategy.

Maybe it was the luck brought by Teacher Tang that the teacher was not there when Chi Lie entered the classroom. He went in through the back door and walked towards his seat along the wall.

Jiang Zhi was sitting in front of him. When he walked over, he noticed that Jiang Zhi was staring intently at something under the table. When he got closer, he saw that it was a comic book.

Looking closer, the style of the current page of the comic book is a bit old-fashioned, and the scale is not small, and the picture is very explicit. It is normal for adolescent high school students to release their restless hormones through literary works.

But why did Jiang Zhi feel something was wrong the more he read the book he was holding?

There are indeed two entangled human bodies on the screen, but the gender of these humans ... seems to be both male!

Although he couldn't infer anything from this, it would be no problem for him to get some evidence against Jiang Zhi.

He bent down, reached out, and grabbed the comic book.

Jiang Zhi thought it was the teacher who came back, so he stood up from the bench and loudly admitted his mistake, " I'm sorry, I didn't mean to read comics in class. I will pay attention next time ... Chi Lie?! "

" Fuck! Are you trying to pick on me? What do you want to do? " Jiang Zhi was furious. The whole class was looking at them. It was so embarrassing.

He was just about to have a manly contest with Chi Lie, but found that Chi Lie suddenly dodged and sat back in his seat. This was not okay. " Stand up, if you have the guts, let's fight after school! "

" Who do you want to challenge? Jiang Zhi, go out and stand in the corridor! " The Chinese teacher with gray hair has walked up to the podium.

Chi Lie just returned to his seat and sat down when he saw him coming. Although he was there for a short time, he got to know this Chinese teacher in a timely manner.

The Chinese teacher is old and has been teaching for many years. He has his own persistence and cannot tolerate many small problems. For example, Jiang Zhi's current behavior should be cause for parents to be called to duty.

So, does he have the chance to see Teacher Tang again?

Chapter 11 His Trust

11

During the 35-minute break, as Chi Lie had expected, Tang Shiqi was notified to come to school to deal with her brother's disciplinary problem.

When Chi Lie went downstairs and passed by the office, he took a look and saw Tang Shiqi and Jiang Zhi standing together in front of the Chinese teacher. They were probably called back before they got home.

Teacher Tang must be very tired. If she is tired, she will sweat, and it must look very nice when she is wet.

He placed his hand on his left chest to calm his rebellious heartbeat, then followed the class team downstairs to run exercises. After half a circle, he went around to the teacher's blind spot and left the team to go upstairs.

The air conditioner in the office on their floor was broken, and the teachers would leave the door open because they felt too hot. As for why he knew this so well, it was because he, like Jiang Zhi, was a frequent visitor.

But in terms of reasons, he felt that he was different from Jiang Zhi. Jiang Zhi always came in because he was too stupid, and he always came in because the teachers were too stupid.

For example, now, he walked in openly, knocked on the door and reported.

The Chinese teacher looked up at him and asked, " What are you doing? "

He spoke without hesitation, " I was late for a class once , and the head teacher made me stand for 20 minutes during the break before I could go back. "

This kind of simple corporal punishment is not uncommon in the high school of a small county.

The Chinese teacher ignored him and turned his attention back to Jiang Zhi.

Tang Shiqi smiled at him, probably as a greeting, but the expression on his face was like that of a student who was criticized.

He felt that it would not be out of place for Tang Shiqi to appear here in school uniform, but her current image was slightly different from what he had expected.

Even in such a hot day, Teacher Tang didn't even look wet, as if he was a person who didn't like to sweat.

Unless he does strenuous exercise, it may be difficult for him to see Teacher Tang like that again, which is a pity.

Fortunately, the air in the office was stuffy. After three or five minutes, the few strands of hair on Teacher Tang's temples began to fall and stuck to his cheeks wetly. He was able to guess the whole thing through this small scene.

He kept staring at Teacher Tang, looking at Teacher Tang's white shirt, the neat collar, and the neck wrapped in the collar, and suddenly he thought of the picture in the comic book.

The text is sentimental and old-fashioned. A slender pianist and a gymnast meet again after a long separation and play a chaotic melody on the piano with love and sweat.

But the picture was so vivid. Although his profession didn't quite match theirs, he felt it was pretty much the same.

The pianist's white shirt was scattered beyond his shoulders, and the beads of sweat on his neck were clear and hot. He found the culprit that made him wet from wanting to read Tang Shiqi's comic book.

the difference between his previous "like" and his feelings for the former captain were nothing more than friendship and admiration, and the so-called feeling was just an illusion of adolescence.

Because he had never had any sexual desire or sexual fantasies about the former captain. But he has feelings for Tang Shiqi.

"I'm calling you! What are you thinking about? Are you out of your mind?"

Chi Lie woke up and found that the old Chinese teacher was calling him. He closed his eyes, shook his head, and finally walked over.

"Have you eaten breakfast? Low blood sugar? Or heat stroke?" The old man handed him a piece of candy. "You look like your soul has been taken away."

"Ah, I'm a little prone to heatstroke." In fact, hypoglycemia is more appropriate for the situation, but unfortunately Tang Shiqi was there, and he had eaten the breakfast bought by Teacher Tang.

After he said this, the old man took a paper cup and poured him a glass of water. "Chi Lie, tell me something too. Jiang Zhi said that you made him angry, so he started yelling."

Chi Lie confessed, "Oh, yes, I saw him reading comics and told him to stop reading and study, but he didn't listen and got angry with me."

After saying this, he sighed, as if he was very wronged.

Tang Shiqi looked at him with guilt, and Jiang Zhi became mute. Although his words were slightly different from the facts, Jiang Zhi, a fool, might not have heard it.

But the next second, he was struck by a bolt from the blue. He could definitely hear the old man saying, "What comic is that? Bring it over and have a look."

Well, that's not fun to watch. Chi Lie was listening to the fun on the side. At first, he watched Jiang Zhi maneuvering frantically, and then the old man retorted one by one. In the end, he couldn't help but turned his gaze to Tang Shiqi beside him.

There were beads of sweat on the back of his neck and his cheeks were slightly red, but why did he still feel so cool being with this person?

Little did he know that his gaze was much hotter than the room temperature, causing Tang Shiqi to turn around and look at him.

But Teacher Tang didn't think too much about it. Instead, like a student, while the old man was concentrating on teaching Jiang Zhi a lesson, she secretly mouthed to him, "It's so hot."

How can someone be so seductive just by turning their head and lip syncing?

Chi Lie was bewitched and took out a test paper from someone unknown on the desk beside him. He folded it into a supportive rectangle with the back of his hand.

Then he moved closer to Tang Shiqi and quietly fanned him from behind.

Tang Shiqi's eyes followed him all the time, from the time he took the test paper to the time he folded paper. She must have thought that anything was more interesting than seeing Jiang Zhi being scolded.

But looking at his surprised expression now, he probably didn't expect that this small fan was folded for him.

However, he seemed to know that he deserved to be favored. After the surprise, he just smiled and naturally accepted Chi Lie's fanning service, with his body and neck tilted towards Chi Lie.

Chi Lie knew that Teacher Tang was just enjoying the slight coolness he created, but it didn't matter. Tang Shiqi was close to him anyway, and this coolness was created by him anyway.

It was Jiang Zhi who broke this beautiful atmosphere. In order to avoid handing the comic book to the teacher, he decided to destroy himself in another way. "Teacher, isn't my brother here?

Ask him to take the comic book home. I promise not to read it in school anymore. "

Chi Lie was not very happy at first because his service was interrupted, but Jiang Zhi's words gave him an idea. It might not be a bad idea to let Tang Shiqi take the comic book home, because Tang Shiqi would definitely be curious about the contents of the book.

Then find an opportunity to ask him for his opinion, and see if you can get a glimpse of his sexual orientation from that.

It happened that Jiang Zhi was winking at Tang Shiqi, but Tang Shiqi looked somewhat reluctant, as if she wanted to embarrass Jiang Zhi and teach him a lesson.

That won't work. Teacher Tang needs to have a chance to take the comic book and read it carefully.

So Chi Lie stopped fanning, poked Tang Shiqi's lower back with the test paper, and looked at Jiang Zhi with a sympathetic expression.

"disgusting " feedback on his performance , Tang Shiqi's words and actions did not escape his routine.

Tang Shiqi: "Teacher, please give Xiaozhi to me. I will keep it safe and will not let him see it at home. "

The old man was also tired, so he nodded and stopped arguing. He just turned around and looked at Chi Lie, "You should call your parents. I taught your homeroom teacher in your previous school. Your grades are definitely not zero. "

Chi Lie was too lazy to uncover the scars of his past, but then he thought, Tang Shiqi is so nice, she will definitely feel sorry for him after knowing this, right?

He never felt that sympathy and other such emotions lacked dignity, and that it was the quickest way to gain further advantage.

So he kept his words from the morning, "This is also my parent, my brother. "

The old man's eyes widened for a moment, and when he saw Tang Shiqi nodded, he didn't ask any more questions. But when he was about to talk about Chi Lie's grades, the bell for the end of the morning exercise rang.

He had no choice but to change his mind. " Okay, let's all go back. Mr. Tang has worked hard. Let the kid give you the comics. We can talk about Chi Lie's matter some other time, okay? "

Although it was a bit regrettable, Chi Lie couldn't stop anything.

The three of them walked out together. Jiang Zhi went to get the comic book, while Chi Lie stood on the side of the corridor with Tang Shiqi. He leaned over and looked down at Tang Shiqi, " I'm sorry, Teacher Tang, I asked you to act as my parent again. "

Hearing this, Tang Shiqi also looked up at him and smiled, " It's okay. If you don't want to call your parents, just come to me. But if there are serious mistakes, I still need to inform your parents, understand? "

" Teacher Tang, I won't make a serious mistake. " Chi Lie said in a weak tone, as if he was wronged.

Tang Shiqi was still smiling, her voice sounding even more pleasant in the chaos of the corridor, " Of course, I believe you. "

After he finished speaking, he turned around and leaned against the corridor wall, continuing to wait, leaving Chi Lie alone to keep turning his head.

After all, the word "believe" is too precious, and Chi Lie has never received it from anyone.

The corridor was too noisy, even Chi Lie's heart couldn't bear it, and it kept beating hard, drowning out everything else with its own strength.

Chi Lie's vision was Tang Shiqi's profile, and his hearing was his heart excited for Tang Shiqi.

The author has something to say:

There are more character designs for Mr. Tang and Xiaochi, on Weibo

When you have time, organize it and pin it to the top of Weibo for easy viewing

Chapter 12 I Want to Live with Him

12

Jiang Zhi arrived late , walked up to the two of them, took out the comic book from under his school uniform, and grabbed Tang Shiqi's shirt and jacket and stuffed it into her arms.

Tang Shiqi didn't understand why, so he took it out and took a look at it. He didn't want to flip through it, but just one look at the cover. The bold picture almost made him throw the book away.

Although it is summer, there is really no need to dress so coolly.

Looking more closely, he realized that the people wearing scantily clad clothes were not a man and a woman. Considering the students coming and going in the corridor, he immediately put the book behind him and looked at Jiang Zhi in surprise.

He opened and closed his lips, trying to speak, " Do you know something? Why are you looking at this? "

Jiang Zhi waved his hands frantically, " I don't know, I don't know. I snatched it from a girl just for fun. Cousin, please don't tell my mom. Please, please, please. "

Tang Shiqi glanced at him with some inquiry in mind, but in the end she just sighed, " Got it, let's go back to class. "

Without the energy to maintain a smile or say hello or goodbye, Tang Shiqi turned around and left.

The bell for class rang, and Chi Lie woke up from his daydream. He then realized that he was the only one standing in the empty corridor. Everyone had already returned to the classroom. He walked back as the bell rang, still holding the test paper in his hand to fan Tang Shiqi, but Tang Shiqi just left like that.

There was wind in the corridor, but after the morning exercise, the crowds of people passing by made even the wind feel hot. He felt inexplicably annoyed, so he returned to his seat and threw the test paper aside.

The test paper was opened by her deskmate, and she opened it with him carefully and pleasantly, " Thank you, Chi Lie, I knew you were a good person. I have been thinking about the score of this test paper for a long time, thank you for helping me steal it back in advance! "

Chi Lie raised an eyebrow. He really didn't expect that he would be a " good guy " for once . But who doesn't want to hear compliments? So he agreed.

The teacher came into the classroom and talked about some things on the blackboard that he already knew. He was too lazy to listen, and his mind was unconsciously occupied by Tang Shiqi again.

Just now in the corridor, my thoughts drifted too far away . I didn't know what Tang Shiqi said or when he left, so ... did Teacher Tang get that comic book?

This concerns a major event in his life.

He straightened up and looked towards the table in front of him. Jiang Zhi was writing or drawing something, but he was definitely not listening to the class.

He stretched out his legs and kicked Jiang Zhi's bench leg, " Hey, did you give the comic book to your brother? "

Jiang Zhi was startled, and stood up all of a sudden, turned his head and whispered, " Are you sick or not? Why don't you keep it for Qingming Festival and burn paper for you? "

When Chi Lie has his own purpose, he won't care about his rude words. " What's your brother's reaction? "

Jiang Zhi sighed, " Are you blind? You're talking as if you weren't there. "

Chi Lie explained, " I was distracted and didn't see it. Why, people are only allowed to be distracted during class but not after class? "

Jiang Zhi tilted his head even more, " Stupid, thanks to you, my brother is angry! "

Jiang Zhi seemed to be particularly concerned about Tang Shiqi's anger. He was whispering to Tang Shiqi, unable to control his emotions, and attracted the teacher's attention.

" Jiang Zhi! Chi Lie! You two, stand against the wall! " A piece of chalk was thrown accurately between the two of them. " You can't stop talking, and you're chatting. Then stand in the back and chat! "

Without any hesitation, the two of them stood up and leaned against the back wall, their postures surprisingly consistent.

The two of them were standing not far from each other , but the back wall was quite far from the last row, so their conversation should not be heard. Chi Lie asked as if nothing had happened, " And then ? "

Jiang Zhi turned his head and looked at him with his eyes wide open, as if to say, "You dare to talk even though you're standing there as punishment?"

Chi Lie didn't care. He only cared about Tang Shiqi. He repeated the expression with his lips, and then what.

Jiang Zhi was feeling a little down, and he also lip-synced with him, but his lip-syncing was not very professional, so Chi Lie could only piece it together roughly.

It should be said that Tang Shiqi doesn't like to talk to people when she is angry. She definitely looked angry just now. They may be in a cold war for a while.

What a bunch of nonsense. To Chi Lie, the only word that could express Tang Shiqi's attitude towards the comic book was " angry " .

This is weird.

If Tang Shiqi is a straight man, then he should be confused or not care. If Tang Shiqi likes men as much as he does, he will never be angry. Teacher Tang does not seem like someone who gets angry easily.

It seems he has to find out on his own.

In the afternoon, the sky was a little cloudy and the wind finally became cooler, which supported Chi Lie until six o'clock in the afternoon. He went back to his cousin's house first.

Regardless of whether you are right or wrong, the elders will not apologize or communicate. The door is left open, which means that what happened before is over.

He walked inside.

Maybe because they were afraid it would rain soon, Yaya was taken back in advance. The bump on the child appeared and disappeared quickly. The little girl ran happily in the yard, and her forehead has become smooth again.

When my cousin saw him coming back, she raised her head and asked, " Did you stay at Teacher Tang's house yesterday? "

Chi Lie paused, " What did he tell you? "

My cousin was washing Yaya's pajamas by hand. " She said you were a good and sensible child and that you should be careful about how you communicate with the younger generation.

Tsk, I didn't even have the nerve to tell him what kind of person you are. When did it become his turn as a stranger to speak? "

Chi Lie took a step back, " If you think so little of me, then don't keep me here. "

" What did you say? " My cousin straightened up completely. " Child, you are not happy when adults say a few words to you. Come into the house, wash your hands and eat. "

Chi Lie stood still. He and his cousin were neither close nor distant. On the one hand, his cousin was open-minded and able to accept his sexual orientation, but on the other hand, she was conservative, just like most parents in the world.

People are contradictory. If others say that his cousin has a sharp tongue but a soft heart, he thinks it is not accurate, at least it is a sharp tongue but a soft heart.

" Sister, I want to live in Teacher Tang's house. " He squatted down, resting his elbows on his knees, and told the truth.

My cousin didn't care whether Teacher Tang was willing or not, she understood his point right away, " Are you attracted to Teacher Tang? You've transferred to another school for the third time and you're still not satisfied? "

Chi Lie didn't answer directly, " My father gives me 20,000 yuan a month. I'll give you half of it. You pick up the broom and chase me out. Deal? "

My cousin immediately put down the clothes in her hand and muttered, " Ten thousand yuan, then our Yaya's English class and painting class ... deal! "

After that, some voices came from next door. It was Tang Shiqi and Jiang Zhi talking. They must have gone to the yard. My cousin picked up the broom and turned on the machine without saying a word.

" You beast! Our family can't keep you anymore! Get out of here as soon as possible! "

Chapter 13 He took me home

13

" You beast! Our family can't keep you anymore! Get out of here as soon as possible! "

My cousin got into the game very quickly, and before Chi Lie could react, he was hit on the side by a broom.

It was too hot, so he didn't wear his school uniform jacket. As a result, his cousin was so engrossed in the role that she didn't hold back at all, and a thick red streak appeared on her arm. This scene came too suddenly. He wanted to come later so that he could see Teacher Tang in her pajamas for the first time.

But it's not impossible to start now, he will see it eventually.

He hissed, covered his wound and started to run away. But he couldn't run too fast so that Tang Shiqi could hear him.

He and his cousin were walking in circles in the yard. He was acting, but his cousin didn't seem to be watching.

Maybe she was speaking up for Yaya's injury. This woman was really ruthless. Chi Lie had no doubt that if he had dodged a little slower, the broom would have landed accurately on his back. Thinking of this, his mind was drawn to another thread: what if the broom really fell on his back? Then Teacher Tang would definitely apply medicine to him again, right?

He really liked Teacher Tang who applied the medicine for him. She was so gentle and submissive.

Too naive.

So he stopped, and as expected, the broom fell on his back, with such force that he staggered and cried out in pain.

He stopped, and his cousin also stopped, and asked him quickly in a low voice: " What are you doing? Why don't you hide? Now it's hitting you. Are you sick? "

At the same time, anxious footsteps were heard from next door. Chi Lie felt his heartbeat speeding up. He turned his head and looked at his cousin, " I think I have a problem. "

Then he ran towards the door with big strides, and my cousin didn't have time to catch up with him.

Tang Shiqi appeared at the door. She was not wearing pajamas, probably because the weather was hot today. She was wearing a vest that she had temporarily changed into last night, and shorts that were not even knee-length.

Chi Lie thinks Tang Shiqi has a nice figure and looks good in any outfit.

This outfit revealed more skin than pajamas, and it was daytime, so Chi Lie realized for the first time that a good-looking person has every bone in the body perfectly rounded.

The cousin didn't catch up, and the broom fell behind Chi Lie, completing the last scene of the drama.

Tang Shiqi saw a broom flying towards the door, so she quickly reached out to grab Chi Lie, dragged him out of the door, and hid him behind her, with a rare look of anger on her face.

He made eye contact with his cousin across the threshold, " Yaya mom, you can't discipline a child like this. "

Yaya still had to go to dance class, and her cousin didn't want to say anything harsh about her acting. She just walked over angrily, sighed heavily, and slammed the door shut.

My cousin's voice came through the door, " Teacher Tang, don't get involved in other people's family affairs. You also ... Tsk, forget it, just deal with it yourself. "

The cousin's footsteps disappeared in front of the door. Tang Shiqi sighed heavily and turned to look at Chi Lie. Her expression was even more aggrieved than Chi Lie's. " Did she treat Yaya like this too? "

" No. " Chi Lie lowered his head, hiding the inappropriate joy in his eyes, " She is very good to Yaya, and to me ... too. "

Tang Shiqi said nothing. He carefully pointed at his arm and looked at it. The place where the broom had hit him was swollen, mixed with red blood and broken skin. " So do you have anywhere to go now? "

" Yes. " Chi Lie turned his body and retracted his arm so that Tang Shiqi could not see it. " I'm fine, Teacher Tang. I transferred here recently. I originally wanted to rent a house by myself, but my parents were worried about me, so they let me live in my cousin's house. I'll call my parents and ask them to help me find a house. "

Tang Shiqi disagreed. " You are already a senior in high school. Who will take care of you if you rent a house? Even if you are capable of taking care of yourself, it is so late now. Where can you find a house? "

Chi Lie still refused, but he used a completely untenable solution to effectively refuse, " I'll go to ... the Internet cafe for now, I should be able to –"

" No! " Tang Shiqi's tone was rarely harsh. She reached out and grabbed Chi Lie's wrist, and pulled him towards her home. " How can you live in an Internet cafe? Why don't you live in my house? "

Chi Lie was very proud. He paused and held Tang Shiqi's wrist, saying, " Teacher Tang, you still have to take care of Jiang. How can I trouble you again? Besides, Jiang doesn't seem to like me very much. "

Tang Shiqi was pulled back a few steps by his sudden stop, and was caught by Chi Lie while staggering.

" If I can take care of one brother, wouldn't it be the same if I had two brothers? It would just be a matter of having one more set of bowls and chopsticks. As for Xiaozhi ... why don't you just live with me? " Tang Shiqi pulled him towards the door of her house again.

Maybe it was because of Jiang Zhi that he naturally treated Chi Lie as his younger brother, or maybe it was because of his profession as a teacher that he had a natural sense of responsibility towards his students.

He looked up at Chi Lie sincerely, " Come home with me, okay? "

Chi Lie finally dared to look directly into Tang Shiqi's eyes. After all, it was normal for a homeless person to suppress some excitement in his eyes now that he had a place to live, right? He nodded slightly, looking at the pair of worried eyes opposite him, " Thank you, Teacher Tang. "

Chi Lie was led in by Tang Shiqi. Jiang Zhi looked up, snorted coldly, and went back to his room, closing the door with a deafening bang.

Chi Lie went to see Tang Shiqi's reaction, only to see that Tang Shiqi acted as if she didn't see Jiang Zhi. She led him straight into the bedroom before letting go of his hand.

The moment he was released, he immediately covered the place where he was pulled with his other hand, retaining the remaining warmth and feeling it.

Tang Shiqi sat at the end of the bed, but he didn't sit down. He just stood opposite her, because he liked the way Tang Shiqi looked up at him.

Looks harmless, submissive, and totally in control.

Tang Shiqi always satisfied him, looking up at him, " I'll help you pack your luggage tomorrow, have you eaten? "

He unconsciously moved closer, clenching his hands behind his back, and his face became calmer. " Not yet. "

" Then let me take care of your wound first, and then take you out to eat. As I promised before, don't worry about Xiao Zhi. " Tang Shiqi said.

Tang Shiqi's expression was not very rich. He had almost only seen this person smile. Just now when he mentioned Jiang Zhi, he frowned slightly, and it seemed that the whole person became more lively.

He watched Tang Shiqi stand up and pass by him. The cuff of her white short-sleeved shirt accidentally rubbed the swollen part of his arm, causing a tingling pain.

At this moment, he was very regretful. Why didn't his cousin hold a knife? Then he would bleed, and his blood would stain the corner of Tang Shiqi's clothes.

White short-sleeved shirts are not as good as dark school uniform pants. Blood stains on them should be impossible to wash off, right?

His thoughts were getting more and more off track when a hand with a familiar temperature grasped his arm. " Go take a shower first. I'll apply some medicine on you. "

So his thinking returned to normal. What was he thinking? If he bled, he would have to go to the hospital, and then it would not be Teacher Tang who would bandage him.

It's good now.

The author has something to say:

* Must-see

Teacher Tang comes from a very good family and he grew up being spoiled. From his perspective, the world is beautiful. He has natural kindness and innocence, coquettishness and beauty.

I personally like this kind of character setting. If you don't like it, please quit in time.

I don't want the characters I worked so hard to create to be scolded, and I don't want to write the 2,000 words that it takes me a day to write, and then happily post them to share with everyone, only to receive nasty comments.

If you share the same interests, please stay and we can have fun together. If you are not into this, I hope you can find articles that suit your taste.

Don't try to kidnap the pen in my hand.

grateful.

Chapter 14 Pull Him Into the Compartment

14

After applying the medicine, Chi Lie felt that the pain in his arm was gone. He followed Tang Shiqi, rinsed, treated, got in the car, and went to a nearby restaurant for dinner.

There were only the two of them.

He was born with a slow sense of pain and didn't care much about the injury on his arm, but Tang Shiqi didn't seem to be the same. Ever since he got in the car, he had taken the initiative to sit in the passenger seat, and Tang Shiqi had been looking at his arm from time to time.

He thought it was nice to make Tang Shiqi feel distressed, but he couldn't bear to see her feel distressed, so he comforted her, " Teacher Tang, your ointment is very effective. It doesn't hurt anymore. "

Tang Shiqi finally came back to her senses and forced a smile, " It's good that it doesn't hurt anymore. "

Although he was insensitive to pain, his eyesight was definitely fine, and the swelling on his arm quickly disappeared after applying the ointment.

He moved his arms, " Teacher Tang, you are so skilled in bandaging and applying medicine every time. "

" Really? " Tang Shiqi paused, finally retracted his gaze, and took apart the disposable tableware in front of him, " In the past ... my friend in the past was a doctor. "

Chi Lie just asked casually, but the answer he got made him unhappy.

What remains on a person and cannot be washed off or wiped off is never bloodstains or any dirt, but habits.

He didn't know the friend Tang Shiqi mentioned, and it was a " former " friend, but that didn't stop him from being jealous. That person left a mark on Tang Shiqi, but he didn't.

He wants to have it, he must have it.

" The food is here! You've been waiting for a long time! " The boss brought a tray and presented three dishes and two bowls of rice. " If the rice is not enough, you can refill it for free.

The two of them scalded the tableware and started to eat. Chi Lie was unhappy and the meal was tasteless. He was thinking about how to add some flavor to the meal.

He swallowed a mouthful of rice as if he was not paying attention, and asked as he reached for his chopsticks, " Teacher Tang, have you read the comic book by classmate Jiang? "

Tang Shiqi on the opposite side stopped chewing and nodded imperceptibly.

" Oh. " Chi Lie picked up the dish and put it into his mouth slowly, taking a long time to let Tang Shiqi guess his purpose.

Then he asked: " Teacher Tang, do you think it's right for two men to be together? "

Tang Shiqi's already slow eating movements came to a complete halt. She looked up at Chi Lie with a serious expression, " Do you think this is wrong? "

" I think this kind of thing doesn't matter whether it's right or not, it just depends on whether you like it or not. If I fall in love with someone one day ..." Chi Lie also raised his head and looked directly into Tang Shiqi's eyes, " Then I won't care about his identity, age, gender, or whether he is right or not. "

Tang Shiqi's expression relaxed and he started picking up food with his chopsticks again. " Well, that's a good idea. Let's eat. "

" Teacher Tang. " Chi Lie did not give up. He poked his chopsticks straight into the middle of the tableware, resting his chin on the back of his hand, looking inquiringly, " You haven't answered my question yet. What do you think? "

" I, I ..." Tang Shiqi tilted her head, seeming to be in distress, " I think it's right, let's eat quickly. "

Chi Lie always felt something was wrong. He was unwilling to accept it and pressed on, " Then which side are you on, Teacher Tang? "

This was already considered an offense, but Teacher Tang was so kind-hearted that he only thought about how to answer whatever was asked. He never knew how to refuse, only how to obey and invite.

Tang Shiqi smiled and said, " Why do you ask? Which side do you think I am on? "

Chi Lie was very frank, and frankness would not reveal the truth. " Ah, I was researching the application questions recently, and my classmates said that most boys who study art and liberal arts are gay , so I thought of you. "

" Really? " Tang Shiqi lowered his head and poked the rice in the bowl with chopsticks, poking each grain one by one. " That's all stereotypes. I'm not gay . I like girls, but I haven't met the right one yet. "

" Oh. " Chi Lie responded and buried his head in eating.

He asked Tang Shiqi two questions today, neither of which satisfied him, and he couldn't eat much. He felt that he had lost out, and wanted to get something back.

Just then, a table of students came into the restaurant to eat, playing and joking. Judging from the direction they were going, they were going to the table next to them.

To get to that table, he had to pass through the passage behind him, so he took his time, stood up when the group of students came, and said to Tang Shiqi: " Teacher Tang, I'm going to the bathroom. "

Then, as he wished, he had some small collisions with the group of people who were playing around behind him.

Not only was he injured on his arm, but his cousin also hit him harder on the back. He had wanted to wait until late at night when he lay down to sleep, and then take advantage of Tang Shiqi's sleepiness to tell him that his back hurt.

Late nights and unclear consciousness will always give rise to some ambiguity, right?

But now, because of the inexplicable jealousy in his heart, he suddenly decided to move the plan forward.

After meeting him, the group of students said sorry and continued walking forward, but he turned back, suddenly let himself fall into the chair, frowned and pretended to be in pain.

He said he was going to the bathroom, but sat back down before taking a step. Tang Shiqi would of course be confused, " Chi Lie? Aren't you going to the bathroom? "

Chi Lie didn't answer, so Tang Shiqi had to shift her gaze from the food to Chi Lie, and what she saw was his frowning expression.

Tang Shiqi quickly put down his chopsticks, stood up and sat opposite him, " Chi Lie, what's wrong with you? Are you feeling uncomfortable? "

Chi Lie shook his head, " It's okay, I just bumped into him. Teacher Tang, you eat. I'm going to the toilet. "

After saying that, he stood up again, walked around Tang Shiqi and went to the toilet from the other side, as if he was deliberately avoiding her.

But how could a collision hurt so much? Chi Lie walked towards the toilet without looking back, and Tang Shiqi followed him as he expected.

Chi Lie walked to the urinal and untied the belt of his school uniform pants, pretending to have just spotted Tang Shiqi, " Teacher Tang, are you going to the toilet too? "

Tang Shiqi looked at him with a worried look on her face. " There's no one here now. Lift up your clothes so I can see what's wrong with your back. Did Yaya's mom hit you? "

" Ah ..." This time Chi Lie was not so persistent. He turned back and pulled his pants down a bit. " Then Teacher Tang, don't watch me go to the toilet. I can't go if you are here. "

Tang Shiqi then realized the offense of his behavior. He didn't dare to look at him any longer.

He said sorry stutteringly and wished he could close his eyes and run into a cubicle nearby.

The restroom in the small restaurant is not very spacious, with two cubicles and two urinals, but the hygiene is good .

Chi Lie solved his personal problems, washed his hands repeatedly with hand sanitizer, and dried them. He did not call Tang Shiqi out, but slipped in through the crack of the compartment door that was not closed tightly, and faced Tang Shiqi in the small single space. " I'm coming in. "

Then he added, " There's no one here now, but there might be someone in a while, so it's better for you to come in. "

After all, his back is his personal privacy. He said so. How could Mr. Tang, such a good person, refuse?

He pinched the hem of his shirt, lifted it up and took it off. Although it was really unnecessary to take off his shirt, as long as his expression was honest enough, there would be no problem with it.

Seeing Tang Shiqi's somewhat surprised and confused expression, he was very satisfied. "Teacher Tang? What are you daydreaming about? "

Tang Shiqi blinked, raised her head and smiled, and generously pointed at his abdominal muscles, " The picture is quite shocking, and the body is really good. Okay, you turn it quickly ... Um! "

Halfway through her speech, Tang Shiqi's mouth was covered.

Chi Lie covered his lips with his right hand, and with his left hand, he raised his index finger in front of his lips, " Sh ...

The two of them fell silent, and there was a noise from the door of the cubicle next to them, as if someone was coming.

If you listen more carefully, there are also two people.

The author has something to say:

I saved 1k yesterday , and I am still playing around ...

Chapter 15 His Mouth and Fingers

15

The door of the next compartment was pushed open. The thin partition could not block the sound of conversation. Chi Lie could clearly hear that there were two men.

" Why are you in such a hurry? "

" You were the one who was anxious, so you flirted with me first. "

Chi Lie thought that such immoral things would only happen in bars, but he didn't expect that the bathroom of a restaurant in a small county town could also have this honor.

If we go out now, both sides will be embarrassed, so the best solution is to not solve it and just wait.

His hands were still covering Tang Shiqi's face. He originally wanted to cover her mouth, but Tang Shiqi's frame was much smaller than his and her face was also smaller, so half of her face was buried in an instant.

His eyes shifted to the partition, but his hands did not move away.

Tang Shiqi's breathing was a little unstable due to nervousness . The warm breath she exhaled lingered on his fingertips. Her lips opened and closed softly, lightly touching his palm.

He was nostalgic for this feeling, so he pretended to be focused elsewhere and didn't want to move his hand away so quickly.

But his hand was too big, covering the tip of Tang Shiqi's nose. The space was small and Tang Shiqi had difficulty breathing.

He felt something touching the back of his hand, and he turned around. It was Tang Shiqi's fingertips. Tang Shiqi tapped the back of his hand, signaling him to let go, and he couldn't stay any longer.

Tang Shiqi's body temperature was obviously not high, but his fingers seemed to be scalded and he curled up and withdrew them from Tang Shiqi's face.

Tang Shiqi didn't know, and no one knew, that the back of his hand had a special meaning and would ignite heat when touched by certain people.

The previous few contacts were only superficial, and this time the distance was closer, and he realized what those previous unusual feelings were about.

The back of Tang Shiqi's hand looks soft, but in fact her palm is extremely rough. It may be due to dancing practice, and there are thick calluses on her palm and fingertips.

Just like the feeling that Tang Shiqi gives people, gentle and soft, yet unfathomable, just like the palm of his hand, there must be something of huge contrast hidden inside, which arouses curiosity and endless imagination.

With a bang, the partition between the room and the next door shook violently. It should be that a man was pressed against the partition by another man, so the breathing and collision sounds became more obvious.

Tang Shiqi raised his hand, extended his index finger, and pretended to cover his ears.

Chi Lie didn't want him to get his wish.

In fact, there has been no loud noise since the two men came in. The walls of the restaurant have average sound insulation. It was just the time when people were getting off work, and the noise from the street was more annoying.

But since the next door hit the partition just now, the sound he wanted Tang Shiqi to hear drowned out the noise of the street.

So he followed his inner thoughts, and his body moved ahead of his brain. He stopped Tang Shiqi's upward hand and took his entire left hand into his palm.

Just like when he suddenly barged in just now, Tang Shiqi looked at him in confusion again.

He had no choice but to insert his thumb into Tang Shiqi's clenched fingers and stretch out his palm, pretending to be curious about the thick calluses on Tang Shiqi's palm.

Looking at Tang Shiqi's expression again, there was a little more depression in his eyes. He paused, guessing that Tang Shiqi didn't like the ugly calluses on the palms of his hands.

So he spread out his palms. Before his senior year of high school, he had been training in a basketball team since he was a child, and there were many thick calluses on his knuckles.

They are the same, if Tang Shiqi feels ugly, then they are equally ugly.

Sure enough, Tang Shiqi showed her usual smile again and pinched his knuckles, as if trying to feel whose calluses were thicker.

Tang Shiqi traced Chi Lie's knuckles, but a whisper mixed with desire came from the other side, "Be good, give me your hand."

Tang Shiqi's expression froze for a moment, then she looked at him and Chi Lie's movements, suddenly put her hands behind her back, stole a glance at Chi Lie, pointed at the short-sleeved shirt that Chi Lie had put on his shoulders, and tried her best to mouth, "You put it on first."

Chi Lie didn't want to wear it.

He had no interest in his figure and even looked in the mirror before taking a shower. But now it was different. This was the body that had been praised by Teacher Tang and he had to let it air dry.

He had to find a new excuse, slowly turned around, and fulfilled his original purpose of coming to the compartment: they came in to see the wound.

He turned his back and didn't know the severity of his injuries. He only heard Tang Shiqi gasp behind him.

It looks like he's seriously injured.

He couldn't see Tang Shiqi's reaction, but he could feel Tang Shiqi's fingertips touching his back, probably checking for injuries, but that didn't matter.

The noise from next door still did not subside. Tang Shiqi might have been distracted by Chi Lie's horrific wound, and she tried her best to check the skin on his back.

But when it comes to him, its nature changes.

He could hear the heat from the next room, and could feel the fingertips moving behind him. He didn't feel that Tang Shiqi was checking his wounds, but the fingertips moving brought a numbing current that went straight to his blood and pulse, piercing him. He intuitively felt that the fingertips were drawing a pornographic picture on his back.

Tang Shiqi did not share Chi Lie's concerns. She felt that the scars on Chi Lie's back were too severe and that she could not handle them properly with her superficial medical knowledge.

When it comes to things like injuries, you shouldn't waste even a minute on them. It's his fault for not asking clearly just now.

He wanted to ask Chi Lie to go to the hospital, but when he opened his mouth he realized their current situation. He looked at the half-naked body in front of him and felt inexplicably hot on his face.

So he lowered his head, took out the mobile phone from his pocket, typed something on a note and handed it to Chi Lie.

[Don't worry about them, I'll take you to the hospital]

Chi Lie did not take the phone. He just took the arm that Tang Shiqi handed over, held Tang Shiqi's wrist very naturally, raised it a little, and looked at the words on the screen.

He didn't like this, he didn't like typing. When Teacher Tang was lip-syncing, his mouth, tongue, and even teeth looked very beautiful, and he wanted to see them.

So instead of responding in writing, he turned around again, pointed to the next door, and mouthed, " Wait until they're done. "

Tang Shiqi's earlobes turned slightly red. She didn't dare to look at Chi Lie's upper body. She looked directly into Chi Lie's eyes, as if trying to hide her identity, and fell into Chi Lie's trap.

He tried his best to slowly and perfectly shape his lips, " Don't worry about them, your wound is more important. "

But Chi Lie didn't care what the other party said at all. He only saw Tang Shiqi's pouting lips because of the word " no " and her round mouth because of the word " mouth " .

He put his hands behind his back and clenched them tightly, suppressing the urge to touch her. " Say it again. " He wanted to see it again.

So Tang Shiqi moved closer to him, made a slight sound, and once again expressed his thoughts slowly and clearly.

The breath exhaled during the whisper hit Chi Lie's shoulder and neck. Knowing his own endurance, Chi Lie finally agreed, shook off his short sleeves, put them on, unlocked the door and walked out.

But they were so focused on each other that they didn't notice that there was no movement next door, and the moment they opened the door, both doors opened at the same time.

When their eyes met, one of the boys opposite quickly blushed, while the other whistled at them and pulled the person next to him to the sink to wash his hands.

Chi Lie was not interested in minding other people's business. He just turned around and glanced at Tang Shiqi. Then he found that Teacher Tang had also turned into a small lantern like that boy.

The author has something to say:

Another chapter tomorrow

Chapter 16 Lean on Him

16

Chi Lie took Tang Shiqi out and watched Teacher Tang pay the bill for him. He lowered his head and pulled him along, trotting out of the restaurant, fearing that he would meet the eyes of the two men who acted as if nothing had happened.

As soon as I went out, I stopped a car and went to the hospital.

The air conditioner was on in the taxi and it was getting dark outside. The outside temperature dropped along with the heat on Tang Shiqi's face, and her complexion returned to normal.

There was a third person here, and it was not convenient for him to say much about what had just happened. He just sat side by side with Tang Shiqi in silence, and that was enough for him to enjoy himself.

Soon they arrived at the county hospital, and Chi Lie took off his short-sleeved shirt again, revealing the wound. The wound was diagonally across his back, swollen purple and bloodshot. The doctors were a little surprised. " Oh, did you have a fight? You kids are so brave to kill people. "

Tang Shiqi clenched his fists, a little nervous, " Doctor, is it serious? "

" Let me take a look first. " The doctor said, walked around behind Chi Lie and pressed the wound with his fingers.

Chi Lie immediately grimaced, regretting that his tear glands were not developed enough so that he could not cry immediately.

He sighed and looked at Tang Shiqi with drooping eyebrows. He didn't say anything, just looked at her, pitiful.

Teacher Tang felt soft-hearted and immediately walked closer, holding Chi Lie's hand, and watching the doctor's diagnosis with concern.

The doctor looked at them and continued with his hands. " Why didn't you feel pain during the fight? Do you feel pain now? "

Chi Lie was always tired of explaining the misunderstandings of outsiders, so he just silently shook Tang Shiqi's hand. He didn't want to bother to express himself, so he just got bolder and pulled Tang Shiqi closer.

He sat on the examination bed, shorter than Tang Shiqi in front of him. Relying on his injured status, he rested his forehead on Tang Shiqi's shoulder, like a child afraid of injections.

But Tang Shiqi couldn't bear to see him being wrongly accused, so she explained to the doctor, " There was no fight, my brother is a very well behaved person. "

The doctor paused, took a step back and looked at Chi Lie's wound. While cleaning the wound, he muttered, " Did his parents beat him? What do you mean by good? If he had been a little more obedient, he wouldn't have been beaten like this. My child is easy to worry about. I never beat him. What mistake did you make? "

It is common for doctors to ease patients' nervousness by chatting, but Tang Shiqi obviously did not like the doctor's way of chatting, and his expression was not gentle enough. " My brother is really well behaved. He did not make any mistakes. This time it was because ..."

As he spoke, Tang Shiqi stopped and looked at Chi Lie.

Chi Lie noticed this and realized that Tang Shiqi never asked him why he was beaten from beginning to end, and believed that he was not wrong from the beginning.

Teacher Tang is so kind that all his pretenses are believed and accepted. So how can we blame him for being more demanding?

He didn't even bother to make up an excuse.

He gently rubbed his forehead against Tang Shiqi's shoulder, and the gesture changed from shaking hands to linking arms, " Teacher Tang, I'm hungry. "

Just now, he was in the restaurant and rushed to the hospital halfway through his meal. He can barely be considered to be in the stage of growing up, so this statement should be true.

Tang Shiqi's attention was successfully diverted, and he looked up at the doctor busy behind him, " Doctor, is it serious? "

The doctor kept working. " It's not a big deal. It just looks scary. I'll go downstairs to get the prescription and pay for the medicine. Be careful not to get it wet. "

" Okay, thank you, doctor. " Tang Shiqi breathed a sigh of relief, looked at the head leaning on his shoulder, patted it to comfort him, " It's okay, it will be fine. "

After coming out of the hospital, Chi Lie no longer had any reason to stick to Tang Shiqi, so he just followed silently behind her.

He found that there seemed to be a container of desire in his body, which began to be measured from the touch with Tang Shiqi. The object of measurement was called: Teacher Tang's touch quota.

Each time he dared to have only a brief contact with Tang Shiqi, if it lasted any longer, the container would be full and explode. After they separated for a while, those desires dissipated, and he was able to restrain himself and get close again.

He thought that falling in love over time was mostly an illusion. Long-term companionship and subtle dependence would, at certain moments, reluctantly turn into love.

That doesn't suit Chi Lie. The love of a 19-year-old boy should be passionate love at first sight.

When they left the hospital, it was already dark. Chi Lie had to go to school the next morning, so they had to buy some simple fast food.

Take it home to deal with it, and also give Jiang Zhi a copy.

Because of Jiang Zhi's reading of BL comics, Tang Shiqi was still in a unilateral cold war with Jiang Zhi, and the two brothers didn't have much communication. He put down the food, turned around and took Chi Lie back to the room.

He went to take a shower, and Chi Lie continued to eat and grow. Everything seemed to be going well, and the chaotic day was about to come to an end.

But Chi Lie would not miss any opportunity. Now his container was empty and he was very hungry.

Tang Shiqi hurried out of the bathroom in her pajamas and rummaged through the backpack on the bedside. The water droplets that had not been wiped off slid down her hair into her shoulders and neck, and hid in her collarbone under the cover of her collar.

He turned around under Chi Lie's gaze, " Chi Lie, your phone is still here with me. I wouldn't have remembered it if you hadn't told me. "

Chi Lie was stunned for a moment, and took the phone that Tang Shiqi handed over. If Tang Shiqi hadn't told him, he would have forgotten it. He almost never put down his phone before. He relied on it to kill time and avoid socializing, but today he didn't think about it at all. Because he was thinking about Tang Shiqi all day.

" Teacher Tang. " He put his phone aside and packed up his takeout lunch box. " I want to take a shower, too. "

" Okay ..." Tang Shiqi stopped talking halfway and said seriously, " It seems that it won't work. Your knees, back, and arms are all injured. It's better not to flush the water. "

Chi Lie rubbed the outer packaging of the lunch box with two fingers, lowered his eyebrows and eyes, " But it's so hot, I'm sweating and feeling uncomfortable. "

" But ..." Tang Shiqi looked embarrassed and seemed to be worried about him. " You have wounds all over your body and can't be washed. I'll turn on the air conditioner for you and see how your wounds are tomorrow, okay? "

No, this is not what Chi Lie wants, it is not enough to fill his container.

What he wants is—

" Teacher Tang, could you please help me wash it? "

Chapter 17 Taking Advantage of His Kindness

17

Chi Lie felt that although Teacher Tang's name was written as Tang Shiqi, it should be read as Dashanren. As long as Teacher Tang could do it, he would never refuse others who came to him for help.

Just like when he asked Teacher Tang to help him take a bath, Teacher Tang could do it, so he agreed very easily.

And this group lasted for more than a week.

His skin was thick and tough, so no matter how serious the injury was, a week would be enough for him to recover. But as long as he didn't say anything, Teacher Tang would assume that he still needed help and would call him to take a shower on time.

In the end, his pitiful conscience finally came to his senses.

That day happened to be their homecoming week, and Teacher Tang, who had just returned from dance practice, didn't even bother to greet them. When he and Jiang Zhi went into the house to look for someone, they found that person sleeping horizontally on the bed in the bedroom.

He and Jiang Zhi had a rare tacit understanding. They quietly left the bedroom together, and for the first time ever, he cooked a meal for Tang Shiqi following a cooking blogger's instructional video.

Except that the taste was a little bland, the vegetables were cut into larger pieces, and the rice was a little watery, there were no other problems. Most importantly, Tang Shiqi enjoyed the meal very much.

That night, Teacher Tang rolled up the trouser legs one by one, piled them up, and kneaded and massaged to relax the leg muscles. Chi Lie sat on the small sofa opposite the bed and watched.

Seeing Teacher Tang's relaxed muscles squeezed between her fingers, with finger marks on the inside, echoing the bruises from dance practice, he realized how jealous he was.

At this moment, he was jealous of Teacher Tang's hands.

Until Teacher Tang looked up and made eye contact with him, " What's wrong? Why are you looking at me like that? Do you want to take a shower? "

After saying that, he immediately stopped what he was doing, stood up and helped him prepare towels and other things.

Even though Chi Lie missed Teacher Tang who was so caring towards him in the mist, he still felt more distressed. " No need for that in the future. My injury is almost healed. Let me do it myself. "

Although the burden was clearly lightened, Tang Shiqi looked disappointed. " Well, I'm already up. You're going home today, so you should rest. I'll help you one last time. "

Chi Lie's refusal just now was probably because his heartache almost overcame his desire.

After Teacher Tang said this, he couldn't suppress his heartache anymore.

He grasped the hem of his school uniform and walked towards the bathroom while accepting Teacher Tang's offer. " Okay, this is the last time. Thank you, Teacher Tang. "

Chi Lie's knee was the least injured, and now there was only a scar that was darker than the surrounding skin color. There was water in the bathtub, and it was very shallow. Chi Lie sat in it, and the water level did not reach his waist.

Tang Shiqi took a towel, folded it into a small piece, avoided the blood scabs on his arm, and wiped his skin bit by bit.

Helping someone take a bath is hard and inconvenient for both the person helping and the person being helped. The area around the bathtub is full of water and is very slippery.

Perhaps it is the nature of the teaching profession, Tang Shiqi never thought it was a trouble.

He takes care of the children in his class, where there are more emergencies and needs. In his eyes, Chi Lie and Jiang Zhi are the same and also belong to the category of " children " , so he naturally took on this responsibility.

But he is also a bit " childish " as a teacher and sometimes gets confused.

Normally, he would put a non-slip mat on the edge of the bathtub before washing, but today he was too tired and forgot that he had brushed the mat yesterday and did not put it in.

The cell phone rang in the bedroom. It was polite to answer the call promptly. He greeted Chi Lie and wanted to bring the phone in to answer it. Chi Lie nodded in agreement.

He put the towel on the edge of the bathtub and tried to stand up, but when he turned around, he stepped on the water on the tiles. Without the anti-slip mat, he didn't pay attention and lost his balance.

him to turn at an angle. He was facing the bathtub with his back, and he fell backwards due to his unstable center of gravity. " Ah—— ! "

With a plop, his calf was caught by the bathtub and he sat in it. When he was about to fall, he felt sorry for his coccyx, but the pain he imagined did not come.

First, a pair of arms intercepted and buffered, and then he sat in Chi Lie's arms and was caught in time.

He patted his chest and breathed a sigh of relief. " Thank you. I was so scared. I forgot to bring the anti-slip mat in today ..."

As he spoke, he paused, he felt something was unusual.

This was not a normal touch, nor was it the temperature that could be felt while sitting in the water. As a man, he knew this very well, so now he was very confused and embarrassed.

Tang Shiqi asked in confusion: " Chi Lie ... ? You, how could this happen ..."

Tang Shiqi wanted to move, but his current position really shouldn't move, as that would only increase the contact. But if he didn't move ... this would be too wrong.

" I'm sorry, Teacher Tang. " Chi Lie was very calm. As long as he acted serious, Teacher Tang would never suspect that he had any bad intentions. " During the coming-of-age ceremony, the physiology teacher said that this phenomenon is normal for people of our age, right, Teacher Tang? "

He threw the question to Tang Shiqi, and how could Tang Shiqi say it was wrong?

Tang Shiqi did not answer the question directly, but just said: " The phone is still ringing. "

Chi Lie's expression and tone were normal, and he didn't intend to lend a helping hand . " Well, then Mr. Tang, go answer the phone first. " After all, Tang Shiqi was a fully grown adult with healthy limbs, so it was understandable that he didn't help with something like sitting up. He looked at Tang Shiqi, who was pursing her lips awkwardly and trying to stand up in an awkward posture.

Tang Shiqi's pajamas were light-colored. After falling into the water, her pajamas were completely soaked, and even the pajamas around her waist and back were wet on her skin, revealing the indentation on her spine.

After all, he was an adult man, and when Tang Shiqi fell down, a lot of water splashed on his back, not only his back, but also his chest.

Color could be seen under the light grey pajamas. Chi Lie couldn't help swallowing his saliva. He was not ready yet and didn't have the ability to calmly face Teacher Tang with such an image. Perhaps he would never be able to do so in his entire life.

The water dripped down Tang Shiqi's pajamas onto Chi Lie's legs. It was clearly warm water, but as Chi Lie looked at the water falling, the temperature of his eyes scorched the water, and the water also became scalding hot.

Chi Lie was burned so much that he bent his legs and accidentally tripped Teacher Tang who was getting up.

The warm body was about to fall into his arms again, so he did not find any guilt in his emotions. He was only excited about the body that he was about to touch, and the drops of water that he could appreciate again.

But suddenly there was pain.

This time, Teacher Tang fell more unexpectedly than the last time. In panic, he randomly supported himself with his hands, and then Chi Lie let out a cry of pain.

Again, as a man, he was very aware that he had injured someone by mistake, and he pulled his hand away almost instantly. He was ashamed and angry, and wanted to cover his face to escape, but he did not dare to do so because of the sinful behavior his hand had just committed.

Chi Lie felt that he had never experienced so deeply and accurately what it meant to be ... painful and happy.

The author has something to say:

The author has made the changes.

Chapter 18 He Noticed My Heart

18

In the end, it was Chi Lie who came to the rescue and helped Teacher Tang, whose ear was on fire, up. The two of them cleaned up the bathroom together.

Tang Shiqi went out to answer a phone call. Chi Lie changed his clothes alone and sat on the bed to calm himself down.

He tried to think of other things to divert his attention, but how could he think of anything else when he was sitting in Tang Shiqi's bedroom?

So he tried to close his eyes again, but the dark vision was more suitable for wanton and dirty things, so when Tang Shiqi deliberately chatted with her mother for more than half an hour before returning to the bedroom, Chi Lie remained as he was.

Although Chi Lie now has pajamas in his own size, it doesn't cover up anything.

Tang Shiqi looked embarrassed and tried to speak in a tone like an elder, "Living with me will interfere with your daily activities. "

Chi Lie felt that the normal reaction of a high school student at this time would be shyness, but unfortunately, he could only feel excitement.

He raised his head and looked directly into Tang Shiqi's eyes. His voice was hoarse as he spoke, "Teacher Tang, don't say that. I'm the one who's been bothering you. "

As long as you are not embarrassed, it is others who are embarrassed. Chi Lie thinks this sentence makes sense. His thick skin allows him to deal with the current situation with ease, but Teacher Tang is just the opposite.

" No, just ..." Tang Shiqi was a little incoherent. Seeing Chi Lie's indifferent look, she felt that if she cared too much about this matter, it would be strange. " Why don't I just go out? "

" Teacher Tang! " Chi Lie called out to him, " This is your bedroom, why are you leaving? I should be the one leaving. "

Having said that, he really got off the bed, without covering himself or hiding.

Jiang Zhi was still playing games in the living room. How could Tang Shiqi let him go out in this state? So she stepped forward and said, " Okay, stop arguing. I'm not going out. You ... go to the bathroom and take care of it, okay? "

Chi Lie clenched his fists at his side, digging his palms with his short nails, but he still couldn't speak. He was afraid that if he spoke any more, his voice would become more than hoarse.

Suddenly, a blasphemous thought brewed in his mind.

He nodded stiffly, turned and walked into the bathroom.

He leaned against the wall with his eyes closed. According to Mr. Tang's habit, he should be leaning on the bed reading, sitting on the bed he just sat on.

Thinking of this, he unconsciously changed his angle, and faced Tang Shiqi through the thick wall in his imagination, unloading everything and releasing everything.

*

Chi Lie cleaned himself up, then washed his hands carefully with detergent and wiped them clean. He looked up at the mirror on the sink as usual, and then he realized that the desire in his eyes had not yet dissipated.

If he went out like this, Teacher Tang would definitely look at him blankly and ask him, Chi Lie, why are you looking at me like that?

But he finally decided to wash his face and clear his eyes so as not to scare Teacher Tang.

He didn't bring in any clothes, he just went out with a bath towel wrapped around his waist.

Teacher Tang had praised his figure more than once. He liked being praised by Teacher Tang and even poured a few drops of water on his abdominal muscles before leaving.

He tried not to be too deliberate, and after walking out the door, he walked towards the bed .

After taking half a step, he found that Teacher Tang had tilted his head back and had fallen asleep against the headboard.

All the careful preparations were in vain. Rather than being disappointed, he felt more helpless.

He didn't even notice the smile on his face. He was just thinking that Teacher Tang would be uncomfortable sleeping like this, so he wanted to go over and help her lay down.

As we got closer, we could see that Teacher Tang had his mouth slightly open because he was tilting his head back, which made us want to look inside. The " person " here specifically refers to Chi Lie.

He closed his eyes and took a deep breath, suppressing those unrealistic thoughts, and gently reached his hand behind Teacher Tang's neck.

Even though he had thousands of ideas, the only thing he put into practice was to let Teacher Tang sleep well.

But Teacher Tang never let him go.

Perhaps she had a sweet dream, or perhaps the air in the north was too dry, Tang Shiqi's tongue briefly extended from her lips, swept across her upper lip and then retracted, leaving a small, moist patch.

Chi Lie's plan was disrupted in an instant.

He could no longer offer simple help. Tang Shiqi's mouth silently bewitched him, guiding his fingers, and they moved closer and closer as if possessed by a magic spell.

He probed, touched, and went deeper until his fingertips were bitten by teeth, and then he suddenly woke up.

Tang Shiqi, who had just woken up, opened his mouth blankly, " Chi Lie? What are you doing? "

He subconsciously shrank back, with some doubt in his daze.

But not blushing or beating one's heart is Chi Lie's special skill. He moved his hand out, bent his knuckles and poked Tang Shiqi's chin, " I saw you sleep with your mouth open, I wanted to help you close it, but my hand is not steady enough . "

Then he stood up and calmly walked to the other side of the bed. Pretending to be innocent was his usual tactic.

He picked up his pajamas and changed into them, and said in a very natural tone, " Teacher Tang, they say that sleeping with your mouth open will make you ugly, you have to pay attention to this. "

Tang Shiqi did not accept it immediately as usual. She looked at him for a few seconds before smiling and saying, " Okay, thank you. I'll pay attention to it. "

Turn off the lights and lie down as usual.

During this period of time, they slept side by side like this. Tang Shiqi slept as usual, but Chi Lie did not.

Chi Lie would prick up his ears to listen to Tang Shiqi's breathing, heartbeat, and even the friction of his fingers against the quilt when he unconsciously curled them up in his sleep.

So now he could clearly know that Tang Shiqi was not asleep, and even her heartbeat was not at the stable rhythm of falling asleep, and her fingers were frequently rubbing the sheets under her body.

" Teacher Tang. " He called softly.

He felt that Teacher Tang seemed to be doubting him, but surprisingly he was not panicked at all. On the contrary, he was inexplicably looking forward to Teacher Tang's reaction.

He is contradictory.

On the one hand, I always convince myself to be restrained, to play the long game and catch the big fish, and to wait for Teacher Tang to slowly accept it.

On the other hand, he also wanted to know how such a kind and defenseless teacher like Tang could tolerate and compromise to that extent.

Weighing the two sides, the more interesting idea prevailed.

" Teacher Tang, do you have anything to say to me? " He turned sideways and faced Tang Shiqi.

He heard Tang Shiqi clutching the bed sheet tighter, her heartbeat becoming more pronounced, and then the sticky, bedtime sounds he loved, " Chi Lie, have you read that comic book? The one by Xiao Zhi. "

Chi Lie answered truthfully: " I flipped through a few pages. "

" Then what were you thinking about in the bathroom of the restaurant? " Tang Shiqi asked again.

This time he couldn't answer. What he was thinking was not suitable to be told to Teacher Tang. It would be too offensive.

" Also, just now ... did you really want to help me close my mouth? " Tang Shiqi sighed, feeling very embarrassed, and after a long time she spoke again, "If you hadn't ... reacted in the bathroom today, I wouldn't have thought about it this way. Once I thought about it this way, everything was wrong ..."

Chi Lie maintained his well-behaved image as always, " I'm sorry, Mr. Tang, my mind is confused. "

" Ah ..." Tang Shiqi sighed, " It's okay. You guys are under a lot of pressure from studying during this period. It can barely be considered as the beginning of love. You just confused gratitude with love, right? "

He added, " I don't know much about relationships, but I did some searching and that's what the experts said. "

After saying this, Tang Shiqi felt much more relaxed. After thinking about it, he didn't think Chi Lie would really like him.

As a teenager, she was ignorant and misled by the comics and the couple in the toilet. She was also grateful to him, the elder who came to her rescue. She confused the two and had an illusion.

It's also a very normal thing.

He didn't take it too seriously. " Think about it carefully. When you think it's appropriate, we can have a good chat, okay? "

Chi Lie appeared very obedient and said, " Okay. "

But what I was thinking in my heart was, Teacher Tang, no one would want to sleep with someone out of gratitude, it can only be because of love.

At least for Chi Lie, it can only be because of love.

Chapter 19 Hold Him in Your Arms

19

There was no difference in their interactions afterwards. Although Teacher Tang told him to talk at the right time, he still couldn't figure out when the right time was and what to talk about.

Until today, when he entered the bedroom and found a folding bed on the left side of the bed, he suddenly felt that now was a good time and there was something to talk about.

It happened that Tang Shiqi also came back from get off work. He stood still, waiting for Tang Shiqi to come in and explain the current situation.

He listened to Teacher Tang's footsteps getting closer and closer, and he paused because of his back, and spoke cautiously, " Chi Lie, why are you ... standing? "

Chi Lie lowered his head and said in a muffled voice, " Teacher Tang, you don't have to be so defensive against me. I'm not that kind of person and I won't do anything to you. "

Tang Shiqi took two steps forward, getting closer to him, but still standing behind him, very patiently, " That's not what I meant, Chi Lie. My bed is a bit narrow to begin with. You'll sleep better if we sleep separately, right? "

" No, I feel safe sleeping next to Teacher Tang , I don't need anything better. " Chi Lie said, his tone like a child in a rage, " You are just guarding against me. "

This time Tang Shiqi didn't say anything, but just sighed silently. She put away the things at hand, sat down on the edge of the bed, and faced Chi Lie.

He wanted to analyze carefully with Chi Lie how to distinguish between love and illusion, and how to stop the illusion from getting worse. Today, he searched for a lot of information on the Internet and was almost going to the library.

However, he was interrupted as soon as he opened his mouth.

Chi Lie raised his eyes slightly, " Teacher Tang, thank you for taking me in during this period. Please ask for a day off tomorrow so I can go out and find a place to live. "

" What nonsense are you talking about? " Tang Shiqi frowned and had to stand up to make her words sound more powerful. " Chi Lie, I wasn't on guard against you. I knew you had unclear feelings for me, but I still slept in the same bed with you. That was so outrageous. "

Chi Lie said nothing, his eyes were red, but it had nothing to do with crying.

He saw Teacher Tang, who was flustered and worried about him. She had just returned from dance class and was still wearing her sweaty training clothes. Her cheeks and ears were red from the sun, and beads of sweat hung on her collarbone.

It was obviously his dirty thoughts, it was obviously his fault, and even now he was coveting Teacher Tang. But Teacher Tang chose her words carefully, fearing that any word would hurt him.

How could he suppress the filth in his heart when he was so easy to bully? His eyes turned red and he looked a little pitiful.

" Chi Lie, don't cry ..." Tang Shiqi completely misunderstood and became even more anxious. " I didn't mean anything else. I just wanted to make sure I didn't delay you. I'm sorry I used the wrong approach. "

Seeing Tang Shiqi's helpless and aggrieved face, Chi Lie made the best of a bad situation and acted pitiful, " It's not Teacher Tang's fault. It's already troublesome enough to stay with me, but you still don't know what's good for you. It's my fault. I will move out. Teacher Tang, don't feel burdened. "

" Don't, I don't mean to chase you away, really not. " Tang Shiqi waved her hands and tried to explain, but Chi Lie showed no sign of wavering.

He had no choice but to put away the folding bed immediately, split the bedding and pillows into two pieces, and placed them neatly on the big bed.

Then she walked towards Chi Lie and held his wrist, " Chi Lie, just pretend that nothing happened. We are still the same as before, in every aspect, okay? "

Chi Lie took advantage of the situation and held him back. He did not agree to Tang Shiqi's request, but instead pressed the issue further, " Teacher Tang, can you hug me? "

Is there anything wrong with a poor student whose young heart has been hurt asking for a hug from the teacher? No, absolutely not.

Tang Shiqi hesitated , but Chi Lie pressed on step by step.

" Teacher Tang, does the fact that I like you make you feel disgusted? You are a straight man, so you think homosexuality is disgusting? "

" Of course not! " As if to prove it, Tang Shiqi moved closer to Chi Lie, " Don't think too much about other things. Oh, how should I explain it to you ..."

" I don't need Teacher Tang's explanation, just hug me. " Chi Lie continued to insist.

Tang Shiqi is kind-hearted but not a fool. Ever since the bathroom incident, he always felt that something was wrong with Chi Lie, but when asked to put it into words, he couldn't put it into words.

Chi Lie didn't give him a chance to think it through. He let go of Tang Shiqi's wrist and lowered his head. " No one wants to hug me, not even my parents. "

But with just a few simple words, his intention of asking for a hug immediately changed from ambiguous to warm, which was very conducive to Teacher Tang's acceptance.

He didn't care how Teacher Tang defined their hug, as long as he got it in the end.

As always, Teacher Tang couldn't bear to see her students looking pitiful. She blamed herself for her hesitation and defensiveness just now, and stepped forward to hug Chi Lie's waist and back tightly.

Teacher Tang patted his back like comforting a baby, " It's okay. It's okay to like boys. "

At that moment, Chi Lie really wanted to ask, according to Teacher Tang's logic, it's okay to like you, right?

But he still held back. After all, this matter could not be rushed. The hug right now was obviously more worthwhile, and the longer the hug could be, the better.

He also put his arms around Tang Shiqi's waist and back.

This was the first time he had such close contact with Tang Shiqi. He had once glimpsed her waist with the help of the wind, touched her shoulders through a towel, and felt her body temperature from half a meter away on the bed.

He held them all in his arms.

Perhaps everyone will feel comfortable and lazy because of short-term satisfaction, but Chi Lie will not.

He is greedy, and short-term satisfaction will only stimulate his greater desire, making him want to pursue long-term satisfaction.

He wants the whole Teacher Tang, inside and out.

Since officially moving here, Chi Lie always wakes up first in the morning. He is not a very hardworking person, but he just wants more moments like this where he can watch Tang Shiqi at will.

This thought was so strong that even the biological clock that had remained unchanged for many years was willing to change to help him realize his wish.

Before going to bed, they lay on their sides obediently. Now, perhaps people subconsciously crave a sense of security, so the two of them squeezed in the middle, facing each other.

Tang Shiqi's eyelashes are not very long, but they are thin and dense. With the sunlight from the window and the fine hairs on her face, her whole body looks soft.

Chi Lie unconsciously stretched out his hand and gently touched Tang Shiqi's eyelashes with his fingertips. He felt that he had never touched anything so carefully in his life.

Tang Shiqi usually wakes up quite late, so when he touched her, her eyelids twitched as if she was about to wake up, so he moved forward a few inches, then closed his eyes and pretended he had never opened them.

When Tang Shiqi's breathing rate returned to normal, he opened his eyelids as if he had just woken up and looked at her suddenly. The distance was too close, which frightened Tang Shiqi so much that she subconsciously retracted her neck.

This is exactly the reaction Chi Lie wanted.

Firstly, Teacher Tang's expression was very cute. Secondly, he could pretend to be injured and win Teacher Tang's sympathy and comfort.

He looked aggrieved, and hurriedly stepped back, then lowered his eyes and said in a muffled voice: " I'm sorry, Mr. Tang, I didn't mean it, don't think too much about it. "

He raised his eyes slightly and saw Teacher Tang looking as helpless as he did last night, crawling towards him on his knees.

As if she was afraid that he would cry again , and to show that she was not disgusted or defensive, Teacher Tang grabbed his hand and comforted him, " You are the one, don't think too much. Just be a good student at this stage, study hard, and think about other things later, okay? "

He still had that pitiful look in his eyes, " I can only miss you after the college entrance examination, right? "

" No, no, that's not what I meant. " Teacher Tang let go of her hand as if she was burned. " Didn't we agree yesterday? Everything is back to the way it was before. Why are you saying this again? "

He said confidently, " You said it, I didn't agree. "

Tang Shiqi: " " He suddenly felt that this younger brother was not as obedient as he had imagined.

Chi Lie stopped when he saw that things were going well, " I was just kidding. Sorry, Teacher Tang, let's wash up and go to school. "

He successfully controlled the rhythm between the two of them, humming a tune in his nose as he walked towards the bathroom, leaving Tang Shiqi alone with his thoughts in confusion.

Lying on the bed, Tang Shiqi rubbed his messy head. Be it pretending to be stupid or deceiving himself, he finally chose the simplest way to understand it: Chi Lie had thought it through, and he was just joking just now.

Little did he know how much trouble his tolerance and unwillingness to say no would bring him. Chi Lie and Jiang Zhi were sent to school by Tang Shiqi as usual. They walked in parallel lines through the school gate. Even though they were sitting at the desks in front and behind each other, their paths were completely different.

It was morning English self-study class, and after the bell rang there was hypnotic listening training. Chi Lie rarely stayed up late, but he didn't study either, as he was thinking about how to take the next step with Tang Shiqi.

In fact, Chi Lie is not completely unlearned. Although his academic performance is not particularly outstanding, he is definitely at the top. He knows a little bit about everything, including painting, playing the piano, and sports.

In addition, due to some miscellaneous things, he had to repeat a year, so he had a thorough understanding of the knowledge in the textbooks.

Rather than wasting time doing things he already knows how to do, he would rather maximize the value of this time: like Teacher Tang.

I think of Teacher Tang's beauty, her kindness, her softness, her warmth, and her body wrapped in her pajamas.

The picture in his mind was colorful. He was scribbling unconsciously on the unknown test paper with the marker in his right hand. Teacher Tang's sleeping face and Jiang Zhi's comic book gradually blended together. He didn't wake up until the English listening recording ended. On the English listening test paper that was about to be submitted, there was a naked man, and the man's face ... was very similar to Tang Shiqi.

It's not impossible to say that they are exactly the same.

He was the last table, but because it was inconvenient to sit by the window, the job of collecting the papers was usually given to his deskmate. His deskmate had long been accustomed to it, and today he took Chi Lie's paper as usual.

The next second, the classmate couldn't help but exclaimed in the classroom, " Fuck! Chi Lie, you, you, you ... you are not that one?! "

Chi Lie was not slow, and if he wanted, he could take back the test paper and make his deskmate shut up. But he paused after only half of his arm was extended.

Why did you want to take it back? Why did you want your deskmate to shut up?

Truth will always come to light. Because of his sexual orientation, he was jointly advocated by parents of the first school and eventually " voluntarily " dropped out. His parents did not have time to teach him anything, but quickly found another school and arranged for him to repeat the year.

As the old saying goes, truth will come out sooner or later. When he arrived at another school, he joined the school team as usual and met the former captain of the school team, who was his closest and most trusted friend at the time. He even mistakenly thought that he had a good impression of the other person.

So he asked, Captain, would you mind if I were gay ?

At that time, he had been tortured by his parents' disappointment and disapproval for too long and was in urgent need of some comfort and support. He placed his hopes on the captain, but the captain gave him a heavy blow.

The captain reported him, accusing him of sexual harassment.

Because the college entrance examination was approaching, the school did not persuade me to drop out this time, but the rumor spread. It spread to the whole school, to my parents, and even to my parents' business partners.

So in addition to disappointment and disapproval, he also earned the honorary titles of shameful, ignorant, and why did I give birth to such a thing as you from his parents.

Finally, his parents "voluntarily" dropped him out of school and threw him into this small county town, just a few weeks ago.

At that time, he felt that the entire small county town was gray, messy gray, and as ugly as a garbage dump.

It wasn't until that day in the dance studio that he met Tang Shiqi.

Tang Shiqi is the only touch of white in all the grayness, with a warm and bright white that makes the small county town look much cleaner.

It just makes him look dirtier.

At this moment, he still continues his filthiness.

What if his sexual orientation is exposed again? In a small county like this, fewer people will accept it, right? When he is attacked with messages and violence again, Teacher Tang will definitely feel more sorry for him, right?

No matter how many people speak ill of him, Teacher Tang will always stand by his side.

"You are all I have." He would say this to Teacher Tang.

"You are the only one I have." This sentence is a perfect moral kidnapping.

So he completely withdrew his hand from stopping his deskmate. Jiang Zhi, who was sitting in front of him, was attracted by the sound and tilted his neck to peek. His deskmate directly handed Jiang Zhi Chi Lie's test paper, "Hey, look at what he drew. Does he like boys?"

My deskmate immediately started to think, "Damn, you transferred to another school because you are gay!"

Jiang Zhi and his deskmate were focusing on something completely different. He looked at the face in the painting and immediately tore the test paper into pieces. "Chi Lie, you f*cking hell, come out with me."

The author has something to say:

I'll update soon, it's almost September.

I estimate that it will be finished in late September or early October.

Chapter 21 He is also my wife, the future

twenty one

Chi Lie suppressed his inner excitement with an expressionless face, but his effort in suppressing it made him look guilty and nervous.

During the listening time of morning self-study, all the teachers went to the morning meeting. He swaggered out of the classroom with Jiang Zhi, and was grabbed by the collar and thrown against the toilet wall by Jiang Zhi.

Jiang Zhi was able to complete the action smoothly thanks to his non-resistance. Anyway, he was born not to like pain, and if he got hurt, only Teacher Tang would feel sorry for him. He loved to see Teacher Tang frowning and looking worried.

" Why didn't you fight back this time? Who the hell was that you drew! " Jiang Zhi stepped forward and grabbed Chi Lie's collar, pushing him against the corner, and the cleaning utensils were scattered all over the floor.

He raised his eyebrows, " You are so angry, who am I drawing ... don't you know? "

" Fuck. " Jiang Zhi cursed softly, and punched Chi Lie in the face with his right fist holding the test paper fragments. You could even hear the dull sound of Chi Lie's head hitting the wall. Jiang Zhi was so angry that he was breathing heavily. " Are you a bitch? My brother is so good to you! And you still sleep with him! "

He looked at the shredded paper in his palm and quickly shook it aside, his face full of disgust, " Is this what you were thinking about while lying in my brother's bed? Aren't you disgusting? " Then he punched him again, and blood immediately flowed out from Chi Lie's right nostril and mouth.

Chi Lie himself felt it as well, and was thinking in his mind, what would happen when Teacher Tang treated the wound on his face?

Teacher Tang likes to blow air on his wounds, so can I pout and blow air towards the corners of his mouth? To round it off, that would be like kissing.

Jiang Zhi looked at him as if he was a monster, his eyes were filled with fear, " I'm beating you, what the hell are you laughing at? "

Chi Lie touched the corner of his mouth. Hmm, it was indeed rising. He answered Jiang Zhi with the smell of blood between his teeth, " I thought of your brother. I'm happy. I really like him. How about you help me match him up? "

Jiang Zhi was a straightforward person to begin with. When he was provoked like this, Jiang Zhi became so angry that he couldn't stop his fists at all.

This beast, when he slept with his brother, he was worried that Chi Lie would infect his brother with Lingdan's stupidity. Now, this idiot is going to take the cabbage directly!

Then don't blame him for being rude.

Jiang Zhi's punches and kicks continued until the bell rang and the teachers returned to the classroom.

The teachers pulled the people apart and hurriedly took Chi Lie to the infirmary to treat his wounds. When they took Chi Lie back to the office to " interrogate " him , their parents had already arrived.

Their common parent, Tang Shiqi.

The moment Chi Lie came in, Tang Shiqi stood up from her chair and ran quickly to Chi Lie. Looking at the swollen half of Chi Lie's face, she felt as if the pain was on herself.

Chi Lie's right eye was a little red and he could not open it smoothly. Blood from the corner of his mouth seeped through the gauze and his cheeks were covered with scratches.

On the other hand, Jiang Zhi was unharmed and he decisively chose to stand on Chi Lie's side. Jiang Zhi was still angry, Stay " away from my brother, you pervert ! "

Without waiting for Chi Lie to speak, Tang Shiqi glared at him and pulled Chi Lie to stand on the other side farther away from Jiang Zhi. While pulling him, he also checked to see if Chi Lie had any injuries on his wrist.

Standing still, Tang Shiqi's eyes were glued to Chi Lie's face. He lowered his brows and reached out to check the wound, but he didn't dare to touch it easily when he saw the bloody purple and red.

On the contrary, Chi Lie, the injured man, was unusually relaxed. He gently stroked the side of Tang Shiqi's head to comfort her, and then quickly let go before any ambiguity arose.

" Tell me, what's the matter? " The teacher looked around, " Tsk, they are still a family, what a hatred and grudge. "

Jiang Zhi wanted to speak, but he knew the stakes and didn't want to expose Chi Lie's sexual orientation, so he evaded the question by saying, " This is our family affair, it's not convenient to talk about it. "

The teacher was also annoyed with these boys. They were in high school but still fighting like elementary school students. If it was really a family matter, he didn't intend to ask in detail. So he looked at Chi Lie, " Housework? "

Chi Lie lowered his head, thinking about the pros and cons. Anyway, his deskmate should have spread the matter in the class, so there was no need to spread it in the office.

He sighed in a fake manner, " It's just a family matter. " Teacher Tang is also my wife, my future wife.

The teacher ignored him and just took Tang Shiqi out of the office to complete some discussions between " adults " . For a while, he and Jiang Zhi were the only ones left in the office.

Jiang Zhi still maintained his pufferfish state, " I'm telling you Chi Lie, I'm saving your face here, but when I get home I'm going to tell my brother right away! I'm going to get you out of our house! "

He leaned on a desk, resting his hands behind his back, changing his pitiful look and raising his chin, " Your brother knows everything. "

Jiang Zhi's expression was blank for a moment, and then he said in disbelief: " You are fucking making this up, right? He knows that you guys slept together, does he like you too ...

Impossible! My brother definitely doesn't like you! "

Chi Lie snorted and laughed, with a hint of pride in his tone, " Your brother is such a good person. If I pretend to be pitiful, he won't have the heart to blame me. "

Jiang Zhi looked at Chi Lie's face, which was completely different from the one he had at home. This bastard lied to his brother and took advantage of him. The more he thought about it, the angrier he got, and he rushed over again.

He was not as tall as Chi Lie, but he grabbed Chi Lie's collar with both hands and pulled him up with all his strength. He wanted to strangle Chi Lie to death, or throw him out. " I will tell my brother everything about these words. Don't try to have any bad thoughts. I won't let you succeed! "

Chi Lie looked up at the ceiling and didn't take Jiang Zhi's words to heart.

The teacher happened to bring Tang Shiqi back, and seeing this scene, he quickly pulled him and Jiang Zhi apart. The teacher stopped Jiang Zhi and scolded him, while Tang Shiqi stared at Chi Lie with concern and wanted to check his neck.

Chi Lie didn't think Jiang Zhi's strength was anything special, but Teacher Tang thought so, so he cooperated by covering his neck and coughing violently as if he had difficulty breathing. He just wanted to enjoy Teacher Tang's care and touch, but he didn't expect to lead himself into a trap.

His hand and Teacher Tang's hand reached towards his neck together. Teacher Tang was slower, so her fingertips fell on the back of his hand.

There is a taboo patch of skin on the back of his hand, and the degree of taboo increases the longer he has known Teacher Tang. Just a light touch triggers his memories of their first meeting and the various images that extend from it.

As if he was exposed, he dodged Teacher Tang's hand for the first time.

Tang Shiqi didn't know the reason, but asked anxiously, "What's wrong? Did you bump your hand?"

Chi Lie nodded slowly, the image in his mind lingering, his nose felt hot, and he raised his hand to touch it.

He has a nosebleed.

Chapter 22 He looks so good when he's shy

twenty two

It was a critical time for high school, so the teacher did not waste any more time and communicated with Tang Shiqi. They went home and solved the problem themselves, and it was not the school's responsibility.

Normally, Tang Shiqi would not pick up his two younger brothers because their dance class and high school dismissal times conflicted, but today he was afraid that they would have another conflict on the road, so he left get out of class early to pick them up.

After class, he met Yaya's mother, who asked him something. After all, she was Chi Lie's parent, so he told her something. However, Yaya's mother didn't take it seriously and just said that Chi Lie, that little beast, was a worry wherever he went.

He is not very happy.

He thought Chi Lie was a very good child, even though Chi Lie said he liked him.

Who hasn't "liked" a few people during adolescence? As long as Chi Lie is guided correctly and slowly realizes that those vague feelings have nothing to do with love, these are not a problem.

He just doesn't like others saying bad things about Chi Lie.

In the classroom, Chi Lie was packing his schoolbag. There were still more than forty days before the college entrance examination, and he had to practice answering questions. He took the books back for the first time.

Because he had never taken it out before, he spent some time searching for it. In addition to the vicious looks from the person sitting in front of him, he also received a lot of extra stares. It was not until he raised his head that the discussions in groups of three or two stopped. His classmates also avoided him like the plague and hunched their elbows when packing their schoolbags.

He thought it was funny and he was in an inexplicable good mood today. He felt like chatting with people. " Homosexuality is not a contagious disease. Why are you hiding? Or do you think I like you? Tsk, I envy your confidence. "

After saying that, he picked up his schoolbag and walked out. Jiang Zhi's voice floated behind him. He should be talking to his deskmate, " Brother, although I also think he is a pervert, he definitely doesn't like you. The person he likes is a hundred times more handsome than you! " Then there were hurried footsteps following, he was in front and Jiang Zhi was behind. He had reason to suspect that Jiang Zhi wanted to beat him again.

However, as soon as he walked out of the school gate, he saw Tang Shiqi standing next to the car waiting for someone. After being surprised for a second, he immediately put on an expression that said " I'm very hurt . "

Tang Shiqi didn't know what was going on, she just felt that Chi Lie looked really pitiful, and her hand unconsciously wanted to touch Chi Lie's head.

Just as he raised his arm, Jiang Zhi pressed his wrist down and said, " Brother, I'm hungry. Come home and eat quickly. "

Chi Lie's pat on the head to comfort him was gone. He gritted his teeth and said nothing, holding his breath as he got into the car.

Tang Shiqi did not start the car immediately. He saw that the surrounding parking spaces were empty and would not get in the way of others, so he decided to find out what was going on now.

Tang Shiqi: " What's the conflict between you two? It made me feel uneasy all afternoon . "

Jiang Zhi crossed his arms and looked out the window, " Let him speak for himself. I feel disgusted and cannot say it. "

Tang Shiqi felt that Jiang Zhi was being rude, so she frowned and ignored him. She turned her body to look at the back seat and asked Chi Lie softly, " Why don't you tell me what's going on? "

Chi Lie raised his head and looked at him, then lowered his eyelids and spoke directly, " I like you, and he knows that, so he thinks I'm a pervert. "

Tang Shiqi was stunned for a moment, and looked at Jiang Zhi with complicated eyes, " Xiao Zhi, do you think ... homosexuality is abnormal? "

" No! Damn, why do you only speak half of your words? Brother, I tell you, he is just pretending, he is really good at pretending! " Jiang Zhi pushed Chi Lie and quickly explained himself, " I don't think there is anything wrong with liking men, but when he does that on paper, it's just ... let him say it himself, I find it disgusting. "

Tang Shiqi had no choice but to turn his gaze to Chi Lie again.

Given his current situation, Chi Lie absolutely cannot tell the truth: Teacher Tang, I drew a picture of how I imagined you would look when I fucked you.

Can he tell this? Obviously not, he can only lie.

He lowered his head, muffled his voice, and tried to be as shy as possible. " Teacher Tang, I don't feel comfortable speaking either. Can I send you a WeChat message? "

Seeing Tang Shiqi nodded obediently, he breathed a sigh of relief and edited the white lie to Teacher Tang.

[Chi Lie: I'm sorry, Teacher Tang. I wrote your name and "I like you" all over the test paper.]

He felt that this wasn't really a lie. Wasn't the meaning of his painting to say "I like you" by name?

After clicking send, he locked onto Tang Shiqi's face, wanting to see his first reaction.

The WeChat notification sound was very clear in the narrow carriage, and Teacher Tang had been guarding the dialog box with him. After the echo of the notification sound faded away, a light red gradually spread from Teacher Tang's neck to behind his ears.

Then, Teacher Tang pursed her lips and glanced at him. He didn't have time to retract his overly intense gaze, and Teacher Tang covered her face with her hands and turned back to the front seat.

Tang Shiqi didn't have any extra feelings for Chi Lie, but it was normal for her to feel embarrassed when such a young, strong and direct love suddenly appeared in front of her.

Only Jiang Zhi felt that something was wrong.

He did not doubt the content of the WeChat message too much, but just looked back and forth between the two people. He felt that his young heart was infinitely hurt and had countless questions.

What was his brother thinking? Seeing someone draw a pornographic picture of him ... his reaction was actually shyness? Could it be that these two had already been in love and had become homosexuals in bed? !

He shook his head to get rid of these messy thoughts, " Brother, don't you think his behavior is offensive and disgusting? "

Tang Shiqi didn't dare to turn around, and looked at Jiang Zhi in the rearview mirror, " Although I don't accept the feelings expressed on that test paper, this behavior is also quite cute. Why did you hit him? "

Jiang Zhi's expression turned into a pupil trembling without exaggeration, " Cute? You think what he does on paper is cute? "

Chi Lie held his forehead to hold back his laughter, while Tang Shiqi was unaware that he had been deceived and continued to defend him, " Xiao Zhi, you are really too impulsive. Why did you hit someone for such a small matter? "

" Me! " Jiang Zhi looked at Tang Shiqi in disbelief, feeling that his brother was not going to stay. " Fuck, my kindness was not rewarded. Respect the blessing and don't die in front of my house! "

Then he muttered, " Who knew you were so good at this ..."

" Stop talking nonsense! " Tang Shiqi finally couldn't help herself and glared at Jiang Zhi, " I'll take you two to dinner first. Xiao Zhi, you have to apologize to Chi Lie when you go back, okay? "

Jiang Zhi hugged his arms and rubbed the goose bumps all over his body, responded reluctantly, and automatically ignored Tang Shiqi's words " I don't accept it " .

Although he didn't want to admit it, he had already figured out in his mind whether he should call Chi Lie sister-in-law or brother-in-law.

The author has something to say:

① If you don't know what to say after reading this, you can comment [Read]

②Of course it would be even better if you have interesting comments!

Will reply if interested

Chapter 23 He looks good when he is distressed by me

twenty three

Jiang Zhi likes his brother Tang Shiqi very much. Since his brother likes him, he can only support him.

Jiang Zhi and Chi Lie shook hands and made peace at the dinner table. The three of them passed by a drugstore and restocked their medicine boxes. When they returned home, they had finally calmed down.

Chi Lie had been looking forward to applying medicine to treat the wound for a whole day, and now he could finally start.

He had already been treated in the school infirmary, and now he just needed to apply some medicine, which he could definitely do himself, but he wouldn't do it himself.

Tang Shiqi didn't think much about it. Treating Chi Lie's wounds was something he had already done many times before, and it had become a habit.

This time, Chi Lie was mainly injured on his face, so he sat down beside the bed very consciously, tilted his head and waited for Teacher Tang to take care of him.

The ointments were very mild, but he grimaced and hissed, acting as if he was sprinkled with salt.

Teacher Tang seemed to be nervous, and her lips became tighter and tighter. After applying the cream on one wound, she let out a short sigh of relief. " Huh, you, why didn't you fight back ..."

Because I want you to apply medicine on me, because you are very close to me when you apply the medicine, and because the posture you use every time when you apply the medicine is enough to make me toss and turn in my dreams a hundred times.

Of course, he couldn't say any of this.

He pitifully squeezed his swollen left eyelid, " Student Jiang is your brother. What if I fight back and you hate me? "

Tang Shiqi paused in squeezing the ointment and sighed, " Chi Lie, the most important thing for you at this stage is to study. Because of me, others are doing the questions on the test paper, and you are scribbling on the test paper. I feel guilty and burdened for delaying your study. "

Chi Lie could hear the rejection in his words, but he didn't care. " Because Teacher Tang didn't agree with my confession, I was thinking about how to make you accept me. If you agree, I won't think about it and it won't delay anything. "

Tang Shiqi thought this was a fallacy, but looking at the wounds on Chi Lie's face, she couldn't bear to teach him a lesson. She just glared at him as a warning and continued to move closer to apply the medicine.

Just this one glance, Chi Lie almost couldn't help but hug Teacher Tang in his arms. He always thought that Teacher Tang was very beautiful, especially her eyes, with double eyelids and peach blossom eyes. She looked affectionate at everyone she looked at, and when she glared at people, it didn't seem like she was scolding them, but more like she was flirting with them.

He sat on the edge of the bed with his legs apart, and Teacher Tang moved closer and closer because of his seriousness, gradually standing between his knees, so that he could hug him with just one arm.

He was just planning how to make Teacher Tang fall into his arms, but Teacher Tang gave him a blow on the head.

Tang Shiqi threw away a cotton swab, " Chi Lie, I tell you very clearly that I ... uh ... don't like men, so don't waste your time on me. "

He changed a new cotton swab, applied the medicine to Chi Lie without changing his expression, and made up his mind to make things clear.

In fact, he himself is not good at relationships, so he can only think about what those teenage relationship experts on the Internet say, " I don't want to be long-winded, but you are really in a critical period now, because whether it is pressure or gratitude, you think you like me, but in fact it may not be the case. "

Chi Lie raised his hand and grabbed Tang Shiqi's arm to stop him, and looked at Tang Shiqi very seriously, " So Teacher Tang thinks that I am just a child and don't understand what love is, right? "

Tang Shiqi dodged a little under his intimidating gaze, but he did not retreat. " No, I don't mean to disrespect your feelings, but you won't get a response from me. "

Chi Lie looked at him for a while, then slowly relaxed his strength and looked straight into his eyes. " It doesn't matter. I will continue to like Teacher Tang. Slowly you will know that my love is not an illusion. "

Tang Shiqi was stunned. He had not had much love experience, only one, and the person was very reserved, so when faced with such a straightforward expression from Chi Lie, he always felt complicated .

On one hand, I feel distressed, but on the other hand, I feel inexplicably happy. After all, being confessed to is a kind of recognition, so it is normal to feel happy.

But he was still mostly troubled. He sighed dejectedly, wondering why Chi Lie was even more stubborn than Jiang Zhi.

Tang Shiqi is twenty-six years old. He will consider the future, reflect on the past, and calculate the pros and cons, but Chi Lie will not.

Chi Lie was nineteen years old, and he only knew that he really liked Teacher Tang at that moment.

" People with different ideas cannot work together, " they didn't talk any more afterwards, Chi Lie quietly enjoyed the care and concern of Teacher Tang. At night, Teacher Tang even slept with him in bed to prove that she didn't dislike his sexual orientation.

Teacher Tang is really stupid. He was led into the trap by his few words and could not find a reason to escape.

He listened to Teacher Tang's breathing and heartbeat as usual. Teacher Tang also went to bed very late today. She must be worried about his affairs.

This is good. Teacher Tang, who has not gotten enough sleep, is very confused and is more suitable to be guided by him.

The next day, Chi Lie went to school as usual. The class was unusually lively. After he and Jiang Zhi entered, the class suddenly became silent.

He sat down in his seat, and his deskmate pulled the bench deliberately, as if to let everyone know that he had distanced himself from homosexuality.

He knew that not all of his classmates had ill will towards him, but that was how it was in his student days: a few troublemakers in the class would express their opinions, and the others would either agree or remain silent.

Especially some boys, who are bad enough and credulous enough, as if they will be attracted to gays if there are any around them.

It doesn't matter. He doesn't care too much. He just does what he should do. Other people's attitudes have nothing to do with him. He only cares about Teacher Tang's attitude. The rest will only be facilitators for him to "morally kidnap" Teacher Tang.

The bell rang for class, but the teacher for morning self-study did not come. Instead, it was our homeroom teacher, Ms. Zhang, who came in hurriedly with an open notebook, as if she had just finished a meeting.

She tapped the desk with her notebook. "We will have the first baseline test this Friday, and then we will have a day off for homecoming. When we return to school, we will have the first parent-teacher meeting of the semester. Parents of every student must be present. If you have any difficulties, please speak to us privately."

Chi Lie didn't really listen, and just did the questions at his own pace to get a feel for it.

However, the three words "parent-teacher meeting" made him think.

The main reason why Teacher Tang rejected him, besides clearly disliking him, was that he was worried about his grades. What would happen if he failed the exam again?

The reason is temporarily determined to be: Teacher Tang doesn't like me, so I have no mind to study. When Teacher Tang likes me again, he will have the energy to take care of other things.

He is about to take the college entrance examination, and grades are his top priority at this stage. Moreover, Teacher Tang also thinks so.

Will such poor results make Teacher Tang compromise a little?

This is a stupid method, extremely childish, like that of an elementary school student.

But for Teacher Tang, any method must be tried. Anyway, Teacher Tang treats him as a "child", and children are childish.

He failed the exam and was ostracized by his classmates because of his sexual orientation. How pitiful.

He was thinking about how to answer the test paper to show that he could do well, but he failed because of his absent-mindedness, and Jiang Zhi turned his head from the front.

"My brother is going to hold a parent-teacher meeting for me. You can go to whoever you want, but you are not allowed to compete with me. Do you hear me?"

Chi Lie looked at him without saying anything, and he asked Teacher Tang to come.

" Tsk. " Jiang Zhi was dissatisfied. He turned around, wrote a small note and threw it to Chi Lie.

[Jiang Zhi: Parents' meeting, parents' meeting, if you think my brother is the parent, then don't like him!]

[Chi Lie: As long as we are family members]

[Jiang Zhi: Isn't there a conflict between family and the object of pursuit?]

[Chi Lie: My wife is also my family]

" Fuck! " Jiang Zhi couldn't help but sighed in the profound C language about Chi Lie's shamelessness. The head teacher heard it and stood in the corridor for the whole morning self-study session.

Chapter 24 He looks good even when he's angry

twenty four

June is the real beginning of summer. The sky is clear during the day, making people sweat profusely. But at night there are lightning and thunder, and then a rain falls in a hurry.

Chi Lie had calculated a night like this that was suitable for the " pain of youth " and intended to remind Teacher Tang not to always pretend that nothing had happened and that he still continued to like her.

The inspiration came this afternoon.

Today is the day of the first placement test. A boy in our class was under so much pressure that he ran out of the campus after finishing the first subject. His parents and teachers searched for him for a long time and finally found him after noon.

He had just finished an exam and was going to the bathroom. When he passed by the office, he saw the boy's mother coming. She used her thin body to hug her son in her arms and said, "You're hurting your mother's heart by doing this."

At that time, he inexplicably thought of Teacher Tang. He wanted Teacher Tang's hug and wanted to touch Teacher Tang's emotions.

After the exam, Jiang Zhi came back to his class from the exam room to find him to go home together. He perfunctorily made a distressed expression and said, "You go first. I didn't perform very well. I have a lot of things to do recently and I want to be alone."

Then he took a taxi to a milk tea shop, where he leisurely enjoyed the air conditioning and watched Teacher Tang's calls come in one after another.

It was not until nearly nine o'clock, when it was dark, thunder was roaring in the sky, and the milk tea shop was about to close, that he answered Tang Shiqi's 27th call.

" Hello, Teacher Tang. "

" Where are you? Jiang Zhi said you didn't perform well, right? I know grades are the most important thing for students, and it's disrespectful to comfort them lightly, but can you go home first? " Teacher Tang on the other end of the phone spoke very quickly, and his breathing conveyed his anxiety. " If you have anything else, we can talk slowly when we get home. Tell me where you are first, okay? "

He was not in a hurry. He closed his eyes and felt Teacher Tang's rapid breathing. After a long time, he sighed deeply, " Teacher Tang, my poor performance is my own problem. It has nothing to do with you. Don't feel burdened. Don't look for me. It's not your responsibility. "

Tang Shiqi was a little angry, " Chi Lie! You can't think of me like that. I didn't come to you because I was afraid of taking responsibility. I was just worried about you. "

Chi Lie raised his lips, threw away the milk tea packaging, and slowly walked into the increasingly dense rain. " Teacher Tang, what should I do? My classmates all know that I'm gay . They all hate me, and you hate me too. "

Tang Shiqi rarely showed his emotions, and he sighed, " What on earth are you thinking about? How could I hate you? "

Chi Lie looked up as if they had just met for the first time, accepting the increasingly heavy rain. " But you said you wouldn't like me, and you didn't even want to give me a chance. "

He thought that Teacher Tang would at least be a little loose, but he didn't expect that Teacher Tang's white ball was not a glutinous rice ball, but an ice cube, who had his own principles. Moreover, he failed to use " moral kidnapping " and ended up being kidnapped himself.

He heard Tang Shiqi hesitate for a second and then said something shocking, " I ... may not respond to you, but don't you like me? I only like people who listen to me. You should go home now, otherwise ... do n't ever come back! "

He thought Teacher Tang was so cute and couldn't help laughing. He immediately covered it up by saying, " Teacher Tang, I'm so sad, and you're still threatening me? "

But Teacher Tang seemed to have heard his laughter. This time he hesitated for a longer time before he heard a sigh from the other end of the line, " Chi Lie, are you kidding me? "

" No, " he retorted, " I like you. "

There was another long silence on the other end of the phone, this time without even a sigh, and then the phone was hung up with a beep.

Chi Lie stroked the screen of his mobile phone. The call was hung up, but he was very happy because he unlocked the angry Teacher Tang.

He felt like he was playing a development game. After passing a level, the system gave his doll an expression skin.

What a pity, he had wanted to trick Teacher Tang into finding him and then ask for a hug, but now he has to go back alone.

Tsk, you can't make plans on the spur of the moment. There are many variables that cannot be taken into consideration, such as how cute Teacher Tang is.

Chi Lie took another taxi and when he arrived at the alley, he was not yet soaked by the rain. He stretched out his arms and looked at himself. He did not look pitiful at all. There was no way to soften Teacher Tang's heart and calm down.

He did not go home directly, but sat at the gate of Tang Shiqi's house, waiting for the rain to make him look more pitiful, and also wanted to wait and see if Teacher Tang would come out to find him.

He stared at the sky in a daze, and the rain seeped into the unhealed wound at the corner of his mouth, causing a slight tingling sensation, but he didn't feel much pain.

He didn't know how long it had been before the door creaked. He quickly turned his head and looked back. Teacher Tang was neatly dressed, with car keys in his left hand and an umbrella in his right hand, obviously about to go out.

Going out at this time, you must be going to look for him, right? He stood up suddenly, his eyes full of uncontrollable excitement.

Tang Shiqi was speechless, and for the first time ever, she spoke in a very rude way, " You still have a wound on your face. Is it so fun to get wet in the rain? What if you get infected? "

" Will it be contagious? " Chi Lie responded casually. His mind was already occupied by Teacher Tang's angry expression, and he could hardly organize his words.

Just now when he was on the phone, he pictured in his mind Teacher Tang's angry look, the redness around his eyes and nose, the slightly wrinkled eyebrows, and it immediately became real, and he was somewhat fascinated by it.

" Yes, it will be infected and it will make you ugly. " Tang Shiqi felt that she had never been so worried about Jiang Zhi, so she spoke a little harshly.

Jiang Zhi has a simple personality, whether it is a fit of anger or running away from home, he can handle it with ease. But Chi Lie is calmer than Jiang Zhi, and has more thoughts. Most importantly, he doesn't know much about Chi Lie's past.

If you can't see through and are not sure, you will unconsciously guess and think. Compared with Jiang Zhi, he puts a lot of thoughts on Chi Lie, so his mood swings are much greater. Little did he know that Chi Lie was enjoying this emotional ups and downs.

He looked at Chi Lie's eyes, which were obsessed with his face, and started talking nonsense, " If I become ugly, you won't like me anymore, right? Then I won't get wet in the rain. Will Teacher Tang let me in? "

He wanted to say something but couldn't, which made him unconsciously think of his last partner.

That person is very conservative and traditional. He would only say that he loves him on their anniversary. Influenced by that person, he is not very likely to say that he loves him often. And Chi Lie is obviously the opposite of them.

Chi Lie's eyes, body language, everything expressed the same meaning: straightforward and passionate love.

When faced with such a relationship, even if he felt that he did not like Chi Lie, he could not help but feel soft-hearted.

His tone softened. " Now that you know to go home, why didn't you come in just now? "

Chi Lie slowly came back to his senses, stretched out his hand and pulled the corner of Tang Shiqi's clothes, " I was afraid that you would see me angry, and I also wanted to know ... whether you would look for me. "

The two looked at each other in silence for a moment. Finally, Tang Shiqi sighed, wiped away the raindrops that were about to slide onto Chi Lie's wound, and said, " I'm not angry anymore. Let's go home. "

The author has something to say:

Rest tomorrow, continue the day after tomorrow, bye

Chapter 25 He Sleeps in My Arms

25

Chi Lie hid under Teacher Tang's umbrella and went back to the room together, only to find that Jiang Zhi was waiting for him in the living room.

Jiang Zhi yawned, slapped his lips and walked to his bedroom, " Did you find it back? Husband and wife quarrel, quarrel at the head of the bed and make up at the foot of the bed, the same is true for husband and wife, I just worry too much. "

Teacher Tang pretended to hit him with an umbrella, " Don't keep talking nonsense. "

Then he turned back to look at Chi Lie, " Hurry up and take a shower and go to bed. You guys have a day off tomorrow, and I'm going to take you out for a nice meal. "

This time Chi Lie became obedient. He nodded and did as he was told. After taking a bath, he did not hang his body out to dry. He lay down in the quilt peacefully, leaning closer to the edge than usual .

He acted so coyly on purpose, and it was so obvious that it was hard for Teacher Tang not to notice.

Teacher Tang watched him get on the bed, put down the book in his hand, turned off the night light, but did not lie down. " Chi Lie, you don't have class tomorrow, let's have a good chat. "

He protested, " We've talked about this many times, and the results are always the same. "

In the moonlight, he saw Tang Shiqi shook her head and turned to look at him.

Tang Shiqi: " It's not about whether you like me or not, it's about your behavior today. If this is what you call pursuit, I don't quite understand it. "

He admitted his mistake quickly and in a good manner, " I will never lie to you again, Mr. Tang, don't be angry. "

Tang Shiqi shook her head again, " Not lying to me is one thing, but the most important thing is not to hurt yourself. You are in a critical period, what if you catch a cold from the rain? "

Tang Shiqi chuckled helplessly, " In my opinion, your behavior is just that of a naughty child trying to attract the attention of his parents. It's a bit childish. "

He looked at Tang Shiqi for a while, then sat up. " Children rely on mischief to attract attention because their parents don't give them enough care and love. This is the parents' fault. "

He quietly moved closer to Teacher Tang, " So I am like this only because Teacher Tang doesn't like me. This is Teacher Tang's fault. "

Tang Shiqi used her eyes to stop him from getting closer, " You have so many twisted ideas. "

He pressed on, " Actually, I want you to hug me again. "

Tang Shiqi frowned, " Does this have anything to do with the topic we are talking about? "

" Hold me and I'll admit you're right. " He opened his arms to Tang Shiqi and said, "

Teacher Tang, there's one thing I didn't lie to you about. I really didn't do well in the exam this time. "

Unfortunately, Tang Shiqi remained indifferent.

He had no choice but to put down his arms and pretend to compromise, but in fact he was fighting for it silently. " My classmates really hate me. Fortunately, the teacher doesn't know, otherwise I would be expelled again. "

This time, Teacher Tang finally responded, " So ... was that the reason you transferred to another school? "

He didn't answer immediately.

It had to be later, so that it seemed difficult for him to speak, and that he had experienced hardships. It had to wait a little longer, until Teacher Tang had time to think about it in the short and quiet night, and shape him into a more pitiful image in her mind.

In the end, he just threw back the quilt and lay down, as if nothing had happened. " Well, no more talking, let's go to sleep. "

After he lay down, he didn't hear any movement from Teacher Tang. He should still be sitting against the head of the bed. It seemed that he had occupied Teacher Tang's mind.

Maybe it was because of the exam and the fact that he didn't get home on time, he felt a little sleepy today. His eyelids became heavier, but he still didn't see any sign that Teacher Tang had fallen asleep.

Just when he could no longer hold on and was about to be overwhelmed by sleepiness, he heard a rustling sound behind him. The sound was different from the previous few days, and it didn't seem like someone had just laid down.

The next second, a pair of arms wrapped around his shoulders and neck.
a belated hug from Teacher Tang .

Teacher Tang's voice was softened by the night. " Chi Lie, there's nothing wrong with liking boys. Just do your own thing in the future. When you go to college and leave here, you will have a more relaxed environment. "

" You'll also meet someone you really like. "

Chi Lie, who was originally intoxicated by the gentleness, suddenly came back to his senses because of the last sentence. He raised his hand and grabbed Teacher Tang's wrist, " No, I won't meet someone I like more again. "

The grip was quite strong. Teacher Tang tried to break free but couldn't. Her breathing and tone were both flustered. " Chi Lie, this hug today has no other meaning except comfort. I hope you don't misunderstand. "

He still didn't let go, and with his arms, he locked Teacher Tang in his arms through the quilt, and said aggrievedly: " You shouldn't have hugged me if you were afraid that I would misunderstand. What should I do, Teacher Tang, I have already misunderstood. "

Maybe it was the darkness that obscured vision and made people lose accurate judgment, or maybe Chi Lie's grievances were too real, or maybe the hug came too suddenly.

Anyway, for some unknown reason, Tang Shiqi stopped struggling. " Why are you so shameless? Let's go to sleep. Let me go. "

Teacher Tang's gentle obedience was his capital for being arrogant. " I feel bad. Can I just sleep like this? "

Tang Shiqi moved in the dark, using her palm to block Chi Lie's chin as it got closer. " Don't go too far. Let's sleep in separate beds. This is too irresponsible for you. "

" One minute. " Chi Lie tightened his arms again, " Hold me for another minute and then let go. "

Teacher Tang was the most gullible person he had ever seen. After hearing the one-minute time limit, she actually slowly relaxed and leaned into his arms.

Teacher Tang's frame was almost a size smaller than his. The summer quilt was too thin and could not provide any barrier. He could clearly feel the presence of the person in his arms.

It was already late, and the person in my arms was a little confused. " Is one minute up yet ..."

He gently placed his palm on Teacher Tang's back and patted her to sleep, " I had counted the number, but when you started talking I forgot. Let me count again. "

Teacher Tang's voice at this moment was as sticky as the first night they met, " You are being naughty again ..."

He smiled, stretched out the sound hypnotically, and counted softly, " One, two, three ..."

He had never spoken so softly before, not even to Yaya. Gentleness and restraint were a challenge for him.

He completed the challenge tonight, and Teacher Tang fell asleep in his arms. He secretly rewarded himself by giving Teacher Tang a kiss on the top of her head.

In this way, he probably understood why Teacher Tang was so defenseless towards him.

In Teacher Tang's heart, he is a child, a younger brother, and a student. Even if he says words like "like", it will not be taken too seriously .

" arrogance " coming from adults .

This kind of arrogance was something he usually hated, but when it came to Teacher Tang, it became very endearing, because this kind of arrogance would make Teacher Tang fall into his trap again and again, and he would hold her tighter and tighter.

The author has something to say:

I'm back. I'm closed on Wednesday.

Chapter 26 He Flees

26

Chi Lie woke up before Teacher Tang, moved stealthily, kissed the cloth on Teacher Tang's shoulders, and then let go early and went to the bathroom to wash up first.

When he came out of the shower, he saw Teacher Tang vaguely confirming his lying position. He said innocently, " If Teacher Tang likes to sleep on the left side, we can switch. How come you're sleeping on my side in such a short while? "

This is Tang Shiqi's home, but he insisted on giving half of the bed to himself, speaking in an ambiguous way.

Tang Shiqi's mind was not clear at the moment. After hearing what Chi Lie said, she quickly moved back to her side. Only then did she realize that it was a unnecessary move.

It was as if he took advantage of Chi Lie getting up to secretly feel his body temperature.

He rubbed his eyes twice, " Chi Lie, let's sleep separately. I swear I don't have any disgust towards you. I just want to make my attitude clear. "

Chi Lie's face instantly turned cold, " What's your attitude? "

Tang Shiqi didn't notice his change of mood. " I only have feelings for you as a brother to a younger brother, nothing more. If we keep doing this, I'm afraid you'll misunderstand and think you still have a chance. "

" No. " Chi Lie answered decisively.

He has received many rejections from Tang Shiqi, and the number will continue to increase in the future, so he accepts them well.

Just say: " You said you are straight, which has cut off my chance. I don't want to be a burden to you. I like you because I want to. You should do what you should do. You don't need to change anything because of me. "

Tang Shiqi felt that she couldn't win the argument, so she simply stopped talking, put on a serious look, and decided directly, " Let's break up. This is my bed and I have the final say. If I continue like this, I will feel guilty. That's it. "

After saying this, fearing that Chi Lie would say something else and make him soften his heart, she stood up and ran into the bathroom in her slippers.

Chi Lie shook his head and smiled. This was simply not giving him any room to perform.

It didn't matter. Their relationship could only move forward and not backward. He would always find a way.

At noon, in the car.

" I'm too far away from the college entrance examination , and I don't understand the current textbook exercises. The only thing I can do is to take you out for a good meal so that you can relax a little at home. " Tang Shiqi drove.

Jiang Zhi took his time away from the game, " Brother, we're going back to school tomorrow for a parents' meeting. Don't listen to my head teacher's brainwashing. "

Tang Shiqi smiled and said, " I won't. You are an adult now and you have the right to make your own arrangements. "

Chi Lie lowered his head and remained silent. He was now just a poor guy who failed the exam and no one attended a parent-teacher meeting.

He thought that Teacher Tang was such a good person, he would definitely agree to his request, so he answered the questions on the test paper that he really wanted Teacher Tang to see.

But after three or five minutes, he heard Teacher Tang's voice coming over, " Chi Lie, do you mind if I help you hold a parent-teacher meeting? After all, I'm not your parent ... This matter seems quite formal. "

Chi Lie looked up suddenly, showing surprise, " Teacher Tang, are you really willing to help me hold a parents' meeting? "

Tang Shiqi still smiled, " Why wouldn't I want to? I'll go if you don't mind. "

" Of course I don't mind. " Chi Lie moved forward.

He reached forward and pulled the back of the front seat of the car. While Jiang Zhi was playing games with headphones in the back seat, he whispered to Tang Shiqi's face: " I thought you were so angry this morning that you wouldn't help me. "

Tang Shiqi blinked and said doubtfully: " I'm not angry. "

Chi Lie moved forward an inch and stared at Teacher Tang's ear. " Why did the teacher run away this morning? If she wasn't angry, was she shy? "

He caught a glimpse of Tang Shiqi tightening her grip on the steering wheel, her thin ears turned red, her eyelashes fluttered, and she looked as if something had been done wrong. But Teacher Tang is an " adult " and cannot show fear in front of a child. He tilted his head and hid, " Go back and sit down. We are driving. It is not safe. "

Chi Lie was quite satisfied, but before he could sit back down, Jiang Zhi pulled him back by his coat, " What are you doing, Chi Lie! I'm still here, you two are kissing in the car?! "

He did not explain immediately, but immediately looked at Teacher Tang's reaction through the rearview mirror.

Teacher Tang's lips opened and closed, and he was so flustered that he couldn't utter a complete sentence. When he saw the red light, he slowly braked and finally found his words. " Xiao Zhi, stop joking. We have no other relationship. "

Jiang Zhi didn't believe it. " Come on, you're still on guard against me? I won't tell my mom and aunt. "

Chi Lie pretended to be serious and explained palely: " Jiang Zhi, it's really not true. We are not together yet. "

" So it's almost time, right? " Jiang Zhi insisted, " Brother, you know he likes you, but you still sleep together. If you're not dating, then what are you doing? "

Tang Shiqi was speechless and muttered, " Let's sleep separately tonight and stop talking nonsense. "

Jiang Zhi was relentless, " Don't let me affect your married life. I really won't tell you. I keep my mouth shut! "

" You! " When the red light ended, Tang Shiqi sighed, stopped arguing, said "let's drive", and drove forward.

As he thought back, he still couldn't understand how he had ended up in such an embarrassing situation.

Maybe he was too indecisive and always followed Chi Lie's requests, so much so that now that he wanted to ask to sleep separately, he was actually afraid that Chi Lie would get hurt.

In his eyes, Chi Lie was an unwanted child who was too well -behaved due to his lack of security, so he always wanted to agree to Chi Lie's requests .

Alas, one still cannot be too indulgent towards the younger generation, especially one who has the illusion that he is in trouble.

Chi Lie didn't have so many thoughts on this matter. At the moment, he was immersed in recalling his memories.

He thought back to what the two brothers had just said. After all, it was rare to see Teacher Tang bickering with others. He pursed his lips tightly, his cheeks slightly puffed up, and his eyes widened a little more than usual. It would not be inappropriate to say that Teacher Tang was the younger brother.

Every expression of Teacher Tang's was made by moving her facial muscles just right. He had never seen any bottles or jars in Teacher Tang's bedroom, and even the mirror was only a small one. How could she be so beautiful?

From the ends of her hair to her neck where her shirt collar was hidden, the small piece of skin that was exposed was enough for him to observe for a long time.

Until the restaurant, until we sit down and start eating, until we finish eating and go home.

Until they were faced with the embarrassment of sleeping in separate beds again.

Chapter 27 He Sees My Love

27

The holiday time always seems to be running at double speed. No matter how much we resist, we cannot avoid going back to school and attending formalistic parent-teacher meetings.

Jiang Zhi was assigned to tidy up the classroom, while Chi Lie volunteered to receive the parents.

But he just wanted to receive Tang Shiqi.

The classmates who came with him to meet the parents all expressed their incomprehension of his sexual orientation. Even if they understood, they could not accept him drawing H pictures.

In short, he was very satisfied with the current situation. Those classmates could go and receive other parents, and he would be the exclusive receptionist for Tang Shiqi.

He slept separately from Teacher Tang last night.

Teacher Tang wanted to sleep on a folding bed, so he was given a big bed. He seemed to obey on the surface, but took advantage of the time when Teacher Tang was taking a shower to crawl into the bedding of the folding bed.

When Teacher Tang came out of the shower, he had already pretended to be asleep.

He felt that Teacher Tang came to see him, and heard Teacher Tang's helpless or distressed sigh. What he was most satisfied with was Teacher Tang's bedding on him.

Although they slept in one bed before, they were still sleeping in two different quilts. Unless he could get close, only his hearing and vision could be satisfied.

But now, he was wrapped in a quilt with Teacher Tang's scent, and his head was resting on Teacher Tang's pillow.

Teacher Tang's cheek and even her lips were once pressed against the pillow.

So he waited for Teacher Tang to finish cleaning, turned off the lights, got into bed, quietly turned sideways, and secretly rubbed his cheek against the soft fabric on the pillow.

After trying to hold back for a few minutes in vain, he finally gave Teacher Tang a light kiss on the place where she often slept on her side.

He was secretly happy and quietly looked up at Teacher Tang. Suddenly he realized that Teacher Tang was also wrapped in the quilt he had slept in.

Just like last night, actually, this could barely be considered a hug.

He silently tightened his arms, gathered all the extra quilts into his arms, lowered his head and took a deep sniff, wishing that it would be great if this quilt was Teacher Tang himself.

His thoughts drifted away and focused, his sight was focused outside the school gate. A familiar car passed by the campus, probably looking for a parking space.

After a while, Teacher Tang appeared at the school gate, wearing the same white shirt and black pants as always, simple, clean and ordinary.

But he thinks these suit Teacher Tang just right. Teacher Tang's face and body do not need fancy things to steal the show. The simpler, the more beautiful Teacher Tang will be. Before other students could shake Teacher Tang's hand, he took the lead and shook Teacher Tang's hand himself.

Teacher Tang was stunned for a moment, then smiled at him, while his classmates looked at him strangely, as if to say, how could a gay man get horny everywhere?

A certain classmate was very righteous and stood up to accuse him, with the disdain in his eyes undisguised, " Chi Lie, be polite to your classmates' parents, let go of your hand immediately. " Chi Lie blinked and didn't reply. He just looked at Teacher Tang as innocently and aggrieved as possible, looking at a loss.

Tang Shiqi felt soft-hearted when she saw this, and quickly stood up. She did not struggle to break free from the hand that was being held, and her other free hand also held Chi Lie's wrist. Then she took a step forward and stood with Chi Lie.

Tang Shiqi: " Hello, classmate. I am Chi Lie's brother, not someone else's parent. "

The classmate paused, touched his head awkwardly, " Sorry, brother, aren't you Jiang Zhi's brother? I didn't know you were related. "

" I'm just Jiang Zhi and Chi Lie's brother. " Tang Shiqi said seriously, " Classmate, be polite to your classmates' parents and remember to address them properly. We'll be leaving first. " Before he finished speaking, Chi Lie felt himself being dragged forward. He had never seen Tang Shiqi walk so fast and for a moment he forgot to ask.

But Tang Shiqi stopped after taking a few steps, turned around, patted her chest with one hand, and still held his hand with the other hand, " Huh, I'm so nervous, I haven't been so rude to anyone in a long time, did I perform well? "

There was surprise in his eyes. If we exaggerate a little, could this be considered as Tang Shiqi breaking through herself to protect him?

Forget it, it doesn't matter what it is. The way Teacher Tang looks up at himself and asks for praise is really attractive.

He smiled and raised his fingertips to smooth Teacher Tang's messy hair. " Teacher Tang, why are you so cute? "

Tang Shiqi's smile froze on his face immediately, because he had heard a cliché saying that if you think someone is cute, you are in love with them.

He had originally held some hope that " Chi Lie's feelings were an illusion " , but when he thought about it this way, his only remaining hope was gone.

He let go of Chi Lie's hand and laughed dryly twice, " Come on, take me to the classroom. "

Chi Lie didn't understand, he just simply thought that Teacher Tang was very cute. He closed his palms that were missing but still followed the instructions and led the way.

According to normal procedure, he should have taken Tang Shiqi to his classroom and had her sit near him.

But the office seems to have a special connection with them.

The office was diagonally opposite the staircase. As soon as they went upstairs, the old man in charge of Chinese language called them, " Chi Lie, come here, bring your brother over so we can talk first. "

He turned to ask Teacher Tang for his opinion, and when he saw Tang Shiqi nod, he started walking towards the office again.

As I walked in, I heard the old man muttering, " The results should be announced to you and your parents after the parent-teacher conference begins, but after seeing the weird answers you wrote on your answer sheet, I didn't sleep well all night. "

Chi Lie lowered his head, trying his best to behave like a prospective college entrance examination candidate who had failed the exam. Teacher Tang behind him had caught up and patted him gently on the back.

He thought it was a consolation, but unexpectedly, Teacher Tang was hiding behind him and quietly asked: " What did you write on the test paper? "

He tilted his head back, and Teacher Tang looked up at him again as he did before.

He suddenly began to hate his excessive height. He could always look down at Teacher Tang from above. Looking at people from this angle seemed to automatically add a soft-hearted filter. Every time Teacher Tang looked at him like this, his heartbeat became uncontrollable.

In Teacher Tang's eyes, he should be a slow- reacting person. The moment he sees Teacher Tang, he is always attracted by something about her and forgets to breathe and speak.

At first he thought he liked Teacher Tang's ears, then he thought he liked Teacher Tang's eyes, or maybe her collarbone, calves, and wrists.

Only now did he realize that he just liked Teacher Tang, so wherever he saw, he liked it.

Before he could answer, the Chinese teacher had already found his answer sheet and sighed deeply.

Chinese teacher: " Mr. Tang, I understand. It is not considered premature love for children of 17 or 18, but it affects their studies, so it must be properly resolved. "

Tang Shiqi was a little confused for a moment. Didn't Chi Lie say that he liked her? How come ... he was in a premature relationship?

So I quickly walked over to verify and took the answer sheet from the teacher.

The composition part on the answer sheet did not have densely packed boring argumentative essays, but only a heart made up of the initials of names. He looked carefully and it was: TSQ .

The author has something to say:

Want to comment~

1-3 treasures in each chapter .

Chapter 28 His red earlobes are so cute

28

Tang Shiqi's ears quickly turned red, and she didn't dare to look up to respond to the teacher. Fortunately, the teacher didn't say much, but threw the question to Chi Lie.

Chinese teacher: " The teacher doesn't want to wrongly accuse you, tell me yourself, are you in a premature love relationship? "

Chi Lie first glanced at Tang Shiqi, but she didn't look back. However, he still stared at her. " It's not puppy love. "

After Mr. Tang visibly breathed a sigh of relief, he added, " I am pursuing this person. Although he hasn't agreed to me yet, I will definitely pursue him. I really like him very much. "

There was a sound of paper being crumpled. It was Tang Shiqi who was so nervous that she wrinkled the edge of Chi Lie's answer sheet.

The Chinese teacher tried to comfort him, " Mr. Tang, don't be angry. I have a friend who taught Chi Lie before and knows that he is a good candidate. It is normal for children to be emotional at this age. Let's communicate first. "

Then he lectured Chi Lie seriously, " Do you think you are being decent? The persistence in pursuing someone is not worth promoting. If the person doesn't like you, you are causing trouble to the other person. "

" Will it bother you? " He looked at Tang Shiqi and asked. The teacher thought he was asking himself, but the person involved knew exactly what was going on.

He knew that Teacher Tang was soft-hearted, and he was afraid that whatever he did or said would go too far and hurt his feelings. Teacher Tang would avoid words like disgust, annoyance, and disgust.

Look, Teacher Tang really shook his head secretly.

" He doesn't feel bothered. " Chi Lie finally turned his gaze to the Chinese teacher, " He would take the initiative to hold my hand, hug me, and be willing to sleep with me, but he seems to have a lot of concerns and always rejects me. "

He didn't mind telling the teacher these words. He didn't care what others thought. He just wanted to make sure Tang Shiqi could hear them.

Moreover, people can always speak in a way that seems to be both true and false. Take what he just said, for example. Is he telling the truth? Yes. But does it have anything to do with the facts? Not at all.

The so-called facts that came out of his mouth turned out to be that Tang Shiqi and he were running towards each other, and could not be together due to unknown reasons.

After hearing this, the Chinese teacher was stunned. After a long silence, he sighed and said, " Of course I have concerns . You are facing the college entrance examination now, and girls must care about their grades too. "

There was a brief silence, and Tang Shiqi stroked the wrinkles on the answer sheet. " The college entrance examination is coming soon, and grades are definitely more important. It is not advisable to fall in love too early. Chi Lie, listen to the teacher and stop getting involved with that girl. "

Chi Lie took a step forward and stretched out his hand to hold the edge of his answer sheet, but in fact he was holding Tang Shiqi's hand. " No, to be honest, I've lost my motivation to study because I've been transferring schools so many times. I decided to study hard because I like him and don't want him to think that I'm a fool who can only get 0 points in exams. If I lose this hope, I won't bother to study anymore. "

Grades belong to the students themselves, but in front of parents and teachers, they can become threats or bargaining chips because these two often care about grades more than the students themselves.

You can't blame Teacher Tang for using both soft and hard tactics when he's like that.

The Chinese teacher was so angry after hearing his nonsense that he took off his reading glasses and wiped them vigorously with a glasses cloth. " Oh, you didn't get a zero for the test, but you drew on the answer sheet? You didn't lose many points before, but you didn't write a single word for me in the composition. You are really promising! "

Chi Lie had plenty of excuses, both to reply to his Chinese teacher and to embarrass his teacher Tang, " No, I wanted to do well in the exam, but when I was writing the composition, I suddenly remembered that he said that my love was just an illusion, and I felt bad, so I couldn't continue. "

Teacher Tang has thin ears, but her earlobes are round and plump, and at this moment they are red as blood, like red pearls.

Besides, Mr. Tang was already shy, so what he said was no less than a confession.

It sounds exciting for a student to confess his love to his " parents " right under the teacher's nose .

Teacher Tang finally couldn't stand it anymore, and calmly broke free from his hand and returned the answer sheet to the teacher.

The Chinese teacher looked at the letter heart and sighed again and again, " Everyone has been through that age, and I'm not stubborn. You can make a promise with the girl to talk about love after you finish the exam. It's only been more than 30 days, can't you wait? "

" I can wait. " Chi Lie immediately added, putting his hand on Tang Shiqi's shoulder, " Then I will focus on studying first, and after the college entrance examination, I will be with that girl. Do you agree, brother? "

Both he and the Chinese teacher looked at Tang Shiqi. He felt that his shoulders and neck were tense under his palms, so he gently soothed them with his thumbs.

It was he who took advantage of the Chinese teacher's misunderstanding to put pressure on Teacher Tang, but it was also he who " kindly " comforted her.

He knew that Teacher Tang was not gay , but what did that matter? Teacher Tang was such a nice person, so he should have given him some thoughts, right?

But the only response he got was a long silence.

The corridor gradually became lively, and the time for the parent-teacher meeting to officially begin was approaching.

" Mr. Tang, the college entrance examination is a major event in a child's life, especially for a child like Chi Lie, who has been delayed for a year. Today we have finally found a solution that allows both sides to compromise. " The Chinese teacher put on his glasses again, stood up and looked Tang Shiqi in the eye. " It's all for the children. At this stage, we should try our best to satisfy the children's wishes and put aside our usual principles. "

The Chinese teacher thought that Tang Shiqi was the evil man who was going to break up the couple, completely unaware that he was one of the couple and was still trying his best to persuade them.

He has been teaching for more than 20 years, and he has to prescribe different medicine for different students, and there are many children like Chi Lie.

Children of this age still believe in agreements and promises. It's good enough as long as they are stable now. As for what will happen after the college entrance examination, it doesn't matter anymore.

Tang Shiqi also understands this truth.

Everything he did was for Chi Lie's good, and he didn't want to delay Chi Lie. So he agreed to it as a delaying tactic, and promised Chi Lie ambiguously that he would consider it after the most important college entrance examination. He wanted to stabilize him first, give him hope and motivation for the future, and then make it clear after the college entrance examination.

Wouldn't it be considered a sin ?

But this is, to put it nicely, a delaying tactic; to put it bluntly, it is deception. It is giving people hope and then extinguishing it, which is a heinous crime.

In the end, he couldn't resist the condemnation of his conscience and couldn't do what the Chinese teacher suggested. He said: " Thank you for your advice and enlightenment, teacher. Let me think about it again . "

After all, it was someone else's family affair, and no matter how concerned the teacher was, it couldn't sway the decision. The conversation didn't go on. The old man gave him Chi Lie's answer sheet and asked them to go to the parent-teacher meeting first.

Stepping out of the office, Tang Shiqi walked towards the classroom absent-mindedly, but her wrist was suddenly grabbed.

He turned around and saw Chi Lie looking at him with drooping eyebrows and complaining, " Teacher Tang, do you blame me? "

The author has something to say:

Chi Lie and Teacher Tang said they wanted some starfish to cheer them up (bushi)

Chapter 29 : Tricking Him into Falling in Love with Me

29

" Teacher Tang, do you blame me? " Chi Lie held Tang Shiqi's wrist and looked at him with drooping eyebrows.

Tang Shiqi turned around and glanced at him with her eyelids raised. " Why should I blame you? "

Chi Lie originally wanted to pretend to be pitiful, but after being looked at by Tang Shiqi, he could no longer pretend.

Teacher Tang, who became more and more vivid in front of him, would only arouse his desires and evils more and more.

He grabbed Teacher Tang's wrist with one hand, but he didn't dare to do anything to Teacher Tang. He could only rub his fingers with his thumb, as if to relieve his addiction, with considerable force.

He raised his head, not sure to make eye contact, so he only dared to look at Teacher Tang's mouth and said, " Blame me ... forcing someone to do something? Is that how you use the word? "

Tang Shiqi poked his heart with his finger, " I am a duck? "

" Of course not. " He wanted to use some force to pull Teacher Tang closer, but in the end he took a step forward. " Teacher Tang, I really like you. You may think my approach is childish or stupid, but I will try any method that can make you and I be together. "

He quietly moved his thumb and placed it on the inside of Teacher Tang's wrist. " But I'm afraid you'll be angry. "

Tang Shiqi was originally a person with no temper, and after hearing these embarrassing words, he could no longer get angry.

His tone softened, " If you're really afraid that I'll be angry, then don't do these things. "

Chi Lie didn't know what to say. He just wanted to test Teacher Tang's bottom line, to provoke her and to act presumptuous. In the end, he was happy to see that Teacher Tang was reluctant to be angry with him.

His thumb finally mustered up the courage to touch the skin of Teacher Tang's wrist and asked carefully, " Are you angry? "

Teacher Tang looked down at Chi Lie's coquettish fingers and said, " Since you asked me this, how can I still be angry? Go back to the classroom quickly, there is no one in the corridor. "

The two were the last to take their seats in the class. Since Jiang Zhi's seat was in the second to last row, on the inside by the window and the parents were already sitting on the outside, Tang Shiqi sat in Chi Lie's seat for convenience.

There was nothing special about it. It was nothing more than some polite words, emphasizing the importance of the college entrance examination, requiring parents and schools to cooperate, and finally reporting the results. After the notice, two more evening self-study sessions were added.

The main idea is similar to what the Chinese teacher just said. Parents should be tolerant and satisfying. In short, they should take full responsibility for matters outside the scope of the school's responsibilities.

It doesn't seem like preparing for the college entrance exam, but more like assisting the prince to ascend the throne.

But Tang Shiqi was born a good student. In middle school, he was the type that his teachers least worried about, so much so that even now, he tends to cooperate with his teachers.

If Chi Lie's request was to hold hands, hug, date, or even kiss him after the college entrance examination, he might have agreed.

Unfortunately, Chi Lie wanted too much, and he couldn't accept being with him.

It was not until the teacher started handing out report cards and test papers that he saw Chi Lie's scribbled test paper, but his score was still at the top of the class, many times better than Jiang Zhi's.

Yes, Chi Lie is like a child from a big city. The education level of a small county cannot be compared with that of a child from a big city. If he delays Chi Lie, his sin will be even greater.

The parents' meeting was over, and Chi Lie had already put the matter of using grades as bargaining chips behind him. He had not expected to succeed in the first place, and it would be strange if such a childish and petty act could succeed.

He just wanted to remind Teacher Tang from time to time that there was someone who liked him, so that he could secure the position of the pursuit object. If Teacher Tang suddenly liked a man one day, wouldn't he be the first choice?

He will try every way he can.

Unexpectedly, Teacher Tang took the initiative to find him, pulled him to the end of the corridor, and said that he wanted to talk more.

" Chi Lie. "

There was a small window at the end of the corridor, and outside was a small forest. Tang Shiqi stared at a tree outside.

" Now that there is no one else around, can you tell me again? If I really don't agree to your request, will you really not learn it? "

He suddenly felt that Teacher Tang was not kind-hearted, but stupid. How could she be so easy to deceive? That was just one of the countless lies he told to pursue Teacher Tang.

But he really likes this kind of stupidity.

Since Teacher Tang asked this, he would take advantage of the situation and give a positive answer, looking forward to a pleasant surprise.

He didn't look at the tree, but at Teacher Tang. " Yes, it's really tiring to keep transferring schools like this, and I don't have any goals. But if you want me to learn, I'll listen to you. "

Sometimes he couldn't tell whether he was lying or expressing his true feelings. In fact, if Teacher Tang said a few nice words to him and advised him to study hard, he would definitely listen.

Not only studying, he felt that he would listen to whatever Teacher Tang said to him.

Unfortunately, Teacher Tang had no self-awareness of this. She even scratched the windowsill with her fingertips and said timidly, " Why don't you lower your standards? I've already said that I don't like men, so why would I be with you? "

Chi Lie was a little surprised, and once again lamented how gullible Teacher Tang was. He had the illusion that he was about to trick Teacher Tang.

He pursed his lips and carefully thought about his words. " I know that Teacher Tang is not my kind. It's difficult for you to accept me. I will definitely return to my own city to take the college entrance examination, and Teacher Tang will not go with me. "

He made a final request, " Can you please ask Teacher Tang to create some nostalgic memories for me during my time in the small county town? "

For example, the simplest thing is, don't always resist him, at least go back to the same bed and sleep.

Unexpectedly, Teacher Tang's acceptance level was much higher than these.

Tang Shiqi's fingertips were unconsciously scratching the window frame, which was a dead corner for cleaning and was covered with dust, but he was completely unaware.

He stared at the tree downstairs, " If you still think you like me after the college entrance examination ..."

Chi Lie said immediately as if a button had been pressed, " I will love you even after I die. "

" Tsk. " Tang Shiqi couldn't help but tsk, breaking the inexplicably ambiguous atmosphere.
" Listen to me first. "

Chi Lie lowered his chin, " Oh. "

" If you study hard, I will give you this wish. After you finish your exams, I can accompany you to eat, watch movies, hold hands and hug, and ..." A young couple came under the shade of the tree downstairs. They couldn't help themselves and their lips and tongues intertwined. He said in surprise, " Kiss! "

Chi Lie also saw it, but he pretended not to see it. " Is kissing okay ? Teacher Tang, do you want to date me? "

Teacher Tang finally turned his gaze back to him, his hands almost leaving afterimages, " No, no, I'm not talking about us, I mean downstairs! "

Chi Lie smiled and pinched Tang Shiqi's index finger, which was covered with dust. He pulled out a separately wrapped wet wipe from his pocket, tore it open with his mouth, and covered Tang Shiqi's fingertips.

As he wiped it, he said, " I saw it. I was just kidding you. "

Tang Shiqi's eyes were filled with resentment. " Thinking you were a good kid was the biggest illusion I ever had in my life. "

Chi Lie was still smiling, and he realized that the corners of his mouth were no longer under his control. " Then Teacher Tang, tell me again, do you want to date me? "

Chapter 30 I like his compliments

30

" Teacher Tang, tell me again, do you want to date me? "

" No! " Tang Shiqi denied anxiously, " It's just a ... transaction, or a reward. It will last for a month, and it will end when you go to college and return home. "

After saying that, he added, " It's just like you said, leaving a memory. I'm a straight man and I won't do anything with you. "

Chi Lie held the wet wipes in his hand and used the inside of his school uniform to wipe Teacher Tang's wet fingers. " Okay, I don't want to do anything with Teacher Tang, you don't have to think too much. "

Tang Shiqi's eyelashes trembled, and he quickly withdrew his fingers, " I didn't think much about it. "

In short, Chi Lie got the opportunity to " fall in love " with Teacher Tang . Before he could ask any further questions, Teacher Tang ran away.

After returning to the classroom, he thought carefully and realized that it was no wonder that Jiang Zhi reminded Tang Shiqi not to be brainwashed by the teacher's ideas when he came to the parent-teacher meeting.

It turns out that Teacher Tang is really easily swayed.

After several attempts of persuasion by the Chinese teacher and the head teacher, Teacher Tang sold herself to him without any clear reason and said it would only take one month.

It's impossible. Even if Mr. Tang gave a deadline of one day, he had a way to extend it to a lifetime.

During lunch break, class, and after school, I heard Jiang Zhi complaining about Tang Shiqi's favoritism along the way. He had agreed to hold a parent-teacher meeting for him, but in the end, he sat in Chi Lie's seat.

Chi Lie was in a good mood and responded a few times. Then he returned home and ran into his cousin.

My cousin just arrived at the doorstep with Yaya.

They usually don't run into each other. Chi Lie goes to school early in the morning, and his school breaks with his cram school, so his cousin always comes back faster on her electric bike. Today, his cousin must have gone shopping, and he and Jiang Zhi were unusually quick, so they ran into each other.

Jiang Zhi ignored him and walked straight to the door, but Chi Lie couldn't do that. After all, she was a relative, so he still had to say hello, "Cousin."

The cousin looked him up and down, "Why are you so excited? Is there something happy? Could it be that you really have won over Teacher Tang?"

"Not yet." Chi Lie didn't plan to say more to his cousin.

"Then why are you so happy? I saw from a distance that something was wrong with you today, as if you had won the lottery."

Chi Lie just wanted to say hello, not to chat, so he didn't explain too much, but simply said: "I'm happy when I think about seeing Teacher Tang soon."

"Tsk, tsk, tsk, look at what you have accomplished." My cousin couldn't bear to hear these sour words. "Then I wish you good luck. I also have to thank Teacher Tang for helping our Chi family get rid of such a scourge like you."

Chi Lie didn't respond. His cousin pushed the electric bike into the yard. Yaya fell asleep in the child seat.

The dance class was over, and Teacher Tang would be back soon. He was thinking about how to get Teacher Tang to put away the folding bed, and when he turned around, he saw Teacher Tang standing at the door.

Already back? Did Teacher Tang hear all the conversation just now?

He was just thinking carefully about whether he had let anything slip when Teacher Tang came out, led him in, closed the door, and walked in in silence.

He was silently pulled into the bedroom by Teacher Tang, and the atmosphere was inexplicably serious.

Tang Shiqi looked up and looked at him, "Chi Lie, do they always say that to you? They say ... those ugly words to you."

What ugly words? Chi Lie was stunned for a moment before he realized that Teacher Tang must have only heard the last sentence. He had heard those words so many times that his ears were callused that he didn't find them ugly at first.

He smiled indifferently, "It's okay, I'm used to hearing it."

Tang Shiqi didn't think it was a small matter. "No matter how used I am to hearing it, it can't change the fact that those words are unpleasant. How can family members do this?"

When Chi Lie met Tang Shiqi's eyes, he suddenly felt that Teacher Tang's family must be very happy to have raised such a pure and innocent child.

But, " Teacher Tang, why did you come to this small county town? "

The topic changed so suddenly that Tang Shiqi was stunned for a moment before answering. She smiled a little embarrassedly, " I've caused trouble for my parents, so I'm trying to stay out of the spotlight. "

Chi Lie found it strange, " Will Teacher Tang also cause trouble for parents? "

" Ah, let's stop talking about me and talk about you. " Tang Shiqi didn't want to reveal more, so she waved her hand and turned the topic back to Chi Lie. " You are not a troublemaker, nor are you ... an animal. Although you are sometimes quite a scoundrel, you are still a very good child. "

Chi Lie seldom received such straightforward compliments from people close to him. He was happy, but for a moment he didn't know how to respond appropriately.

Just joking: " I'm not a child anymore, Mr. Tang, I'm your boyfriend. "

Before being refuted again, he added, " The reserve force. "

Tang Shiqi glared at him and slumped her shoulders, not even bothering to correct him that he had not agreed to a relationship, but only to help Chi Lie create some memories he wanted. He even wanted to ask if he could regret it now. He was influenced by the atmosphere of the parent-teacher meeting at that time, as if his life goal had become helping his " child " to get into college.

I don't know what got me into this situation, but I actually agreed to such an outrageous thing in a fit of anger.

I don't want to think about it anymore, let it be.

Tang Shiqi stepped back and let himself collapse on the bed, then immediately sat up, " I almost forgot, you sleep on the bed today, the teacher said that we must ensure the quality of sleep for the candidates. "

" No. " Chi Lie pressed Teacher Tang's shoulders to prevent him from escaping. " I've gotten used to sleeping with you these past few days. I can't sleep well if you send me away. "

" You're lying. " Tang Shiqi tried to pry the hand on his shoulder away, but couldn't, so he gave up. " I saw you slept soundly this morning. "

" Because I was not used to it and couldn't fall asleep at night, I slept too late and didn't wake up in the morning. " Chi Lie explained, his hand slowly moving from his shoulder to Teacher Tang's neck, unconsciously, attracted, " Last night, I smelled the smell on the quilt and imagined it was you, so I fell asleep. "

Tang Shiqi originally wanted to refute his twisted logic, but after hearing the second half of his sentence, he was too embarrassed to even raise his head.

Is it the age gap or the gap in life experience? Why is Chi Lie always able to express everything to him so directly? Perhaps it is because of his ex's implicitness that he is flattered by Chi Lie's feelings and forgets what to say.

Chi Lie took advantage of the good opportunity to throw all the bedding on the folding bed back into the big bed, and the folding bed was also folded and retracted neatly.

Tang Shiqi said weakly, " I haven't agreed yet. "

Chi Lie took it for granted, " Not replying means consent. You replied too late, so it doesn't count. "

Tang Shiqi was a little embarrassed, " You are being a rogue again. "

Chi Lie did not stop. He pushed the folding bed against the wall and boldly sat on the carpet at Teacher Tang's feet to test Teacher Tang's " trick " of looking up at people from below.

Chi Lie: " Teacher Tang, don't show that expression, and don't feel burdened. I don't think you are giving me a chance, and you are not indecisive. If you don't know what to do, just follow my ideas. "

" Sleeping together does not mean having sex together. " He knew that Teacher Tang was easily " brainwashed " and tried to persuade her, " I forced you to do it. I am a scoundrel. I am a beast. It is none of your business. Okay? "

Tang Shiqi blushed and compromised as he expected, " Okay, stop talking, let's go together, don't talk about yourself like that. "

The author has something to say:

I was a little tired when writing this chapter, so I wrote some daily life in the next chapter. I hope you will enjoy reading it.

No tomorrow, see you Thursday

Chapter 31 His Compromise

31

In the end, Teacher Tang's struggle only lasted for one night. After being separated for a night, the two squeezed back into one bed.

Chi Lie was unwilling to stop here. It was all because Teacher Tang was so indecisive and easy to manipulate that he became more and more greedy.

He was still able to keenly discern that Teacher Tang had not fallen asleep yet, but he boldly moved his hand towards Teacher Tang's side.

Tang Shiqi grabbed his hand outside the quilt, " What do you want to do now? I've been with you for so long, why don't you go to sleep well? Don't be unable to get up tomorrow. "

Chi Lie shook his hand back, " Just like now, I want to hold hands in advance, is that ok? "

Tang Shiqi was half-believing and half-doubting, " Did you really just want to hold hands? "

Chi Lie was not afraid to tell the truth, " Ah, if Teacher Tang had found out a little later, it would have been an advance hug. "

Tang Shiqi didn't know whether to laugh or cry. " How could there be a child like you? You have bad intentions towards me and you even tell me all your bad intentions. "

" First, I'm not a child. " Chi Lie moved closer and turned sideways to face Tang Shiqi. " Second, I told you my bad intentions. If you don't get angry with me, I'll be happy. "

Chi Lie doesn't mind revealing all the lies he has told and the tricks he has used. He has always done this, but he has to be careful about the timing. For example, the truth that his cousin kicked him out of the house is not suitable to be revealed now, but the others are harmless.

After all, pursuing someone is not about doing something and then being moved by it. It's about letting the other person know what you've done.

These little fights can only make Teacher Tang feel his love, care and dedication. They can also test Teacher Tang's bottom line and see Teacher Tang shy. Why not do it?

Tang Shiqi smiled helplessly, and inexplicably wanted to ask: " Your students nowadays are really interesting. When you were pursuing your classmates, did you also use this method? "

Chi Lie sneaked closer, " I haven't even chased anyone else yet, but I already like you. "

Tang Shiqi no longer believed the little liar's sweet talk. " Don't fool me. You said you liked me when you only knew me for a few days. I don't believe you have never liked others before. "

You can accuse him of other things, but not this. Chi Lie propped up his upper body with his arms, " I didn't start liking you after seeing you for a few days. I knew I liked you the first day I saw you, and I've never liked anyone else. "

In the moonlit darkness, he found Teacher Tang's eyes and said, " I've had the same illusion you described. I thought I liked that guy and tried to test his sexual orientation, but he turned around and reported me. "

Gradually adapting to the dim light, he found sympathy and heartache in Teacher Tang's eyes as he wished, and slowly lay down on his side, getting closer, " So I know that liking you is not an illusion. "

Now, as long as he lowered his head, he could lean on Teacher Tang's shoulder, and Teacher Tang did not dodge at all.

Teacher Tang is the easiest to control when he is sleepy. As long as Teacher Tang's kindness takes over, you will have no time to think about anything else.

He will fall into Chi Lie's trap, and also into Chi Lie's arms.

Chi Lie moved the last inch forward, pressed close to Teacher Tang, and said pitifully: " You were the first person I liked, but I wasn't the first person you liked. "

Tang Shiqi was led by the atmosphere and the words, and actually felt inexplicably guilty, blurting out: " I'm sorry ..."

Then he immediately realized that he was not in a relationship with Chi Lie, and Chi Lie would not be the first person he liked. How could he be brought into the role of partner by Chi Lie for no reason?

He said in dissatisfaction: " Oh, you have led me astray again. Stop talking. You are just scaring me. "

Chi Lie stretched out his arms and hugged Teacher Tang into his arms, like coaxing a child to sleep, and gently patted Teacher Tang's waist to comfort her, " Okay, okay, go to sleep. "

The bedroom became quiet. Tang Shiqi, who was used to going to bed early, closed his eyes. In his groggy state, he always felt that something was wrong.

He forced himself to open his eyes again, and finally came to his senses. He said in shock: " When did you get so close to me? Lie back down. "

Chi Lie pretended to be asleep and pretended not to hear.

Tang Shiqi blushed a little, " I know you didn't sleep ... This is so rude, go back quickly. "

Chi Lie was shameless and pretended not to hear.

Tang Shiqi had no choice but to stand up and said, " If you don't get up, I'll be angry. "

Chi Lie finally couldn't hold it back anymore and burst out laughing, " Teacher Tang, do you really treat me like a child? I'm not your elementary school student. I'm almost 20 years old. " Tang Shiqi learned his lesson. " Don't tell me anything else. Go back. "

Chi Lie was able to strike the right balance between being pushy and annoying. He slowly moved back to the left, muttering, " Go to sleep. When you fall asleep, I'll sneak over to hug you. Just pretend you don't know. Don't feel burdened. "

The phrase he said most often was "don't feel burdened".

Regardless of the sexual orientation gap between straight men and gays , even if he was pursuing Teacher Tang as a girl, facing the 7– year age gap and the awkward identities of teacher and student, it would be difficult for the older one to let go of his bottom line.

So he said, don't be burdened, don't think about those external things.

He hoped that Teacher Tang would only look at him as a person. After all, his sexual orientation was enough of a concern for him, and he didn't want any other mess.

Tang Shiqi was speechless. He suddenly realized that his twenty-six years of life experience was still not enough. When he met someone like Chi Lie, he really couldn't deal with it.

He was so sleepy that he didn't have the energy to speak, so he didn't reply, hoping that Chi Lie was just joking.

If it was not a joke, then it was just like Chi Lie said, when you don't know what to do, just follow Chi Lie. Anyway, he wouldn't feel anything no matter what Chi Lie did after he fell asleep.

Ignorance is not a crime.

One thing he has been best at over the past twenty years is lying down. When his energy does not support him to make a completely correct judgment, he will first choose to listen to other people's opinions.

If others cannot help him make a choice, he will choose to escape.

Just like because of his ex, he could no longer live in peace in the place where he used to live, so he fled and hid in an inconspicuous small county town to realize his wish that was not understood by the public.

It opened a cute pink jewelry store, and upstairs was an elementary school dance class full of childlike fun.

So when he vaguely felt an arm around his waist, he did not check the actual situation, and fell into a deep sleep with his exhausted nerves as usual.

He thought that Chi Lie was more of a good boy.

Chi Lie doesn't need him to bear the responsibilities of an " adult " , nor does he need him to worry about right and wrong, nor will he let him fall into confusion and escape.

It's like telling him that liking you is my own business, and it doesn't matter whether you accept, reject, or don't respond.

Unlike his predecessor, who clearly made a mistake but put all the blame on him, causing unrest in both the family and the company.

The author has something to say:

I'm back. If you want to comment but don't know what to say, you can just post it (read it).

The countdown numbers on the back wall of the classroom were getting smaller and smaller. The tens digit changed from three to one, and then to zero, urging time to pass quickly. In the blink of an eye, it was the college entrance examination that we both anticipated and resisted. Chi Lie overestimated his abilities and started studying too late, so he spontaneously went to evening self-study with the boarding students until nearly ten o'clock every day.

Teacher Tang was afraid that he would be tired, so he would pick him up with different midnight snacks every day. Fortunately, he did not disappoint Teacher Tang's concern, and his test scores became better and better.

Especially when compared with Jiang Zhi, his results seemed even more satisfactory. He felt that Teacher Tang always looked at him through the filter of a good student and was particularly tolerant of him.

These days, in order to be responsible for himself and to have a good bargaining chip in the "deal" with Teacher Tang, he has sacrificed too much happiness.

I don't have time to sneak a peek at Teacher Tang in the morning, and I feel sleepy as soon as I touch the pillow at night. I can't muster the energy to do anything else.

Sometimes I would even get so tired that I would snore quietly, and Teacher Tang would record it and make fun of me, saying that the sound was exactly the same as the snoring of a puppy at the intersection.

He also asked for a separate bed for the first time, fearing that it would affect Teacher Tang's sleep quality. However, Teacher Tang did not agree and told him not to mind it.

Then he won't persist much longer.

The only good thing is that Teacher Tang is a person who forgets to take bribes, so he was forced to restrain himself, and Teacher Tang's vigilance towards him dropped back to its initial level.

She didn't mind him changing clothes, nor did she deliberately avoid possible contact. Even if he occasionally said something inappropriate, Teacher Tang would just laugh it off.

Simply put, Teacher Tang was like a frog in the boiling water, and their relationship reached a delicate balance.

Sitting in the car, Teacher Tang handed him a bag of stationery, "I don't know which brand you like to use now, so I bought them all. You can go back and try them. The rest can be given to Xiaozhi."

He took it and found a file bag with many small packages inside. It was obvious that he had bought them from many places.

Teacher Tang let him choose first, and he was happy, "Teacher Tang, you value women over me?"

Tang Shiqi smiled calmly, with the tiny lights of the street lamps in his eyes, "You are talking nonsense again. You are all my brothers."

There were many moments when they drew a line in the sand, and Chi Lie never pursued the issue persistently, but today was an exception. He was a "giant panda" who would take the college entrance examination the day after tomorrow, so he could let loose on many things.

" No. " He retorted in a light tone, " It won't be that soon. Teacher Tang, you haven't forgotten what you promised me, right? "

" Don't change the subject. I didn't agree to anything that would make me pass the test. " Tang Shiqi moved her hands on the steering wheel, smiling as usual. " Prepare for the test well and stop thinking about these messy things. "

He tilted his head to stare at Teacher Tang's profile. " Compared to you, exams are a mess. " Tang Shiqi blinked a few times, curled his index finger and placed it on the steering wheel. After passing two intersections, he managed to utter, " Slippery tongue. "

On the last day before the exam, in order to ensure that the students could rest, the school ended classes early and evening self-study became voluntary. Jiang Zhi ran home early, while Chi Lie attended the evening self-study get out of class as usual and was picked up by Tang Shiqi.

It's not that he was unsure, he just wanted Teacher Tang to pick him up.

When he got home, Teacher Tang had already prepared dinner. In order to take good care of him and Jiang Zhi over the past month, Teacher Tang's cooking skills have improved a lot.

While eating, Teacher Tang kept reminding them what to bring and what to pay attention to, and he barely ate a few bites of the food.

He tried to pick up some food for Teacher Tang, but Teacher Tang was unable to put her attention back on the bowl.

He had no choice but to pick up a medium-sized shrimp, tap it on the edge of the plate, and stuff it directly into Teacher Tang's mouth.

" Hmm! "

Tang Shiqi was talking when he was suddenly stuffed with food. He was at a loss as to what to do with Chi Lie's chopsticks. He bit the shrimp into his mouth, chewed it twice, and swallowed it. In a resentful tone, he asked: " Why, do you think I'm too long-winded? "

Chi Lie took back his chopsticks and stared at the tip of the chopsticks that had been in Tang Shiqi's mouth. " I was worried that you wouldn't be full. "

After saying that, he didn't pick up anything, but put the tip of the chopsticks directly into his mouth, biting it with his teeth, and looked at Teacher Tang openly.

They are all family, and there is no distinction between public and private chopsticks when eating. None of the three big boys has ever looked down on anyone, and Chi Lie's actions were not particularly excessive.

But each of the three people at the dinner table could see the deeper meaning.

Tang Shiqi's cheeks and ears were on fire. He buried his head in eating and was too embarrassed to say another word.

Chi Lie was the calmest. He smiled and lowered his head, eating the rice in his bowl as usual. Only Jiang Zhi felt that he was being fed like a dog. He was so full of dog food that he didn't want to eat. All he could see was "damn gay" .

He believed in his heart that Chi Lie and his brother were together, but they were having a secret relationship because they were afraid that he would tell his parents.

him . The faucet in his room was broken and there was a problem with the water flow. He wanted to go to his cousin's place to use the bathroom to wash up, but when he opened the door, he was caught in bed by his cousin .

His brother and Chi Lie were sleeping face to face. Although no one was hugging the other, the distance between them was almost the same as Ling's, and their hair was tangled together. At that time, he thought that when they were unconscious, the two of them could be so close to each other, which must be true love! They were inseparable even when they were asleep! Since then, he liked Chi Lie even more. He could only respect and bless the sister-in-law chosen by his brother.

The author has something to say:

The frequency of recent updates has changed

Pay attention to the notification

Chapter 33 He Always Pushes Me Further

33

People always regard the college entrance examination as a major event in life. In fact, parents and teachers are often more nervous than individual students themselves. For example, Teacher Tang has been nervous since several days ago, and Chi Lie has a very stable mentality .

The first exam was at nine o'clock, but Teacher Tang woke up at five o'clock.

The two of them always got closer and closer in the dark. As soon as he opened his eyes, Chi Lie woke up too.

It gets light early in the summer. Chi Lie squeezed his eyes, but felt his eyelids were sore and he couldn't open them. Just as he was about to raise his hand to rub them, his eyes were covered by a cool, calloused hand.

He blinked in Teacher Tang's palm and heard a sticky voice mixed with sleep, " It's not time yet, I woke up early, you continue to sleep. "

In the past, he would wake up inexplicably in the early morning, rub his eyes and then go back to sleep for a nap, and he would sleep even more soundly during this nap.

He should have been like this this morning, but there are always reasons that break the " should have " .

Maybe I'm almost through it and will be able to go on a date holding hands with Teacher Tang soon, or maybe Teacher Tang's palm is too comfortable, or maybe Teacher Tang's voice is too attractive.

Not only did he not want to go back to sleep, but his whole body and brain became excited.

He still raised his hand, put his four fingers together and clasped Teacher Tang's fingers, and rubbed Teacher Tang's fingertips with his thumb.

His voice was hoarse: " Teacher Tang, can you give me a hug before the exam? "

" ... Hmm? Sure. " Tang Shiqi was still half asleep and half awake. She just felt that as an elder, it was only natural to give her child a hug before he entered the examination room.

Unexpectedly, the next second, my wrist was pulled down.

steadily on the soft mattress . When he pulled her like that, Teacher Tang fell on his chest. He embraced the person with his arms, locking any possible struggle into his arms. But Tang Shiqi didn't struggle, she just woke up halfway from her sleep, " What are you doing? " Chi Lie patted Teacher Tang's back like he was a child, slowly calming her heartbeat that had suddenly started due to the shock. " It's still before the exam, I want my hug. "

Tang Shiqi was already used to his roguery, so he just smiled and said, " Is it over? "

Chi Lie shook his head, " No, it's not enough. "

Tang Shiqi indulged the giant panda and lay obediently on Chi Lie's chest for a while. When Chi Lie almost coaxed her to sleep, she pretended to hit Chi Lie's arm and said, " Okay, I can still sleep for a while. Let me go. "

Chi Lie refused, " Just sleep like this, Teacher Tang. Hold me while you sleep. Good luck on the college entrance examination. "

Tang Shiqi didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He didn't believe Chi Lie's lies. He leaned on the bed and tried to get up, but Chi Lie held his waist and carried him back.

This is crossing the line.

It would also delay Chi Lie's nap. What if he dozed off in the examination room later? He wanted to be serious and refuse Chi Lie's hug, while trying to get up again.

Unfortunately, due to the huge difference in strength, when he stood up he could only move a different position in Chi Lie's arms, a very awkward position.

They were all men of the right age, and all functions were fine. They woke up in the morning as expected. Tang Shiqi was touched by his own fault, and for a moment he dared not move.

The most outrageous thing Chi Lie had done in the past month was probably to always change the subject and remind him that they would " fall in love " after the college entrance examination .

So much so that he almost forgot that the day he discovered Chi Lie's feelings was because Chi Lie couldn't control himself and hit him.

Chi Lie is a person who has desires and feelings for him. He can't always forget his previous rogue side just because his " good brother " occasionally appears.

He didn't dare to look up and buried his head in Chi Lie's chest, thinking that he had avoided it perfectly, but it only made Chi Lie more excited.

Chi Lie groaned under his pressure, " Teacher Tang, please stop tossing and turning. Let's sleep like this. If we don't sleep now, what if I fall asleep during the exam? "

Tang Shiqi: " " You still know .

Chi Lie thought that Teacher Tang's silence was a compromise, so he relaxed his arms a little and prepared to take a nap.

Unexpectedly, Teacher Tang had learned his lesson. The moment he relaxed became his weakness, and Teacher Tang seized upon it. He struggled hard and escaped from his arms. Then, Teacher Tang lifted up his quilt to cover him, wishing he could wrap him up and stop his limbs, no, five limbs, from causing trouble.

The action is done in one go.

He stared blankly at Teacher Tang's escape, clapped his hands and said he would go and cook for him.

Although it was a pity to lose the warmth in his arms, seeing Teacher Tang's blushing cheeks and her beaming with joy because of her successful escape, I felt it was worth it.

Teacher Tang is very cute when he is in my arms, and he is also very cute with a smug little expression.

Especially when Teacher Tang's pajamas were rubbed open by him, the light red indentation on her collarbone made her even more adorable.

A little after eight in the morning, Tang Shiqi sent her two younger brothers to the examination room. Jiang Zhi, her younger brother, was very easy to talk to. He checked their documents and stationery, then got out of the car and went into the school to find the examination room.

Chi Lie, his younger brother, is quite cunning, and he doesn't want to miss this critical moment when he is about to enter the examination room.

During this period of time, Teacher Tang will agree to whatever he asks for, right?

He thought about taking it step by step first, so he put his belongings aside and frowned at Teacher Tang who was puzzled as to why he didn't get off the bus and said, " It's really before the exam now, and I seem to be really ... a little nervous. " No way.

Tang Shiqi was also skeptical, but since it was the real exam, he continued, " So do you still need a hug? "

Chi Lie didn't expect that Teacher Tang would be so easy to talk to this time. His brows immediately relaxed and he nodded rapidly.

He watched Tang Shiqi unbuckle his seat belt and move around to the back seat. He clasped the inside of his fingers with his thumb nail, trying to resist the urge to hug him around the waist. He waited, being a good student.

Teacher Tang opened the car door and got in. Seeing Chi Lie standing straight, he thought he was really nervous and felt guilty for his malicious speculation.

There was a huge difference in size between him and Chi Lie, and no matter how he hugged him, it seemed like he couldn't give people a sense of security.

So he had no choice but to kneel on one knee in the back seat, making himself taller than Chi Lie, and moved closer, hugging Chi Lie to his chest.

The hug lasted quietly for a few seconds. Chi Lie finally couldn't bear it anymore. He raised his hands to press on Teacher Tang's back, tightened his arms, and buried his head in Teacher Tang's chest and took a deep sniff.

He had wanted to do this for a long time, especially in bed.

Teacher Tang was obviously using the same shower gel as him, but he always felt that Teacher Tang smelled sweeter. Teacher Tang had thin chest muscles from dancing, and at the moment, even without exerting any force, their chest muscles were still soft.

He thought he looked like a piece of wood sprayed with perfume after taking a shower, but Teacher Tang looked like a cotton ball soaked in sugar water.

He leaned against Teacher Tang's chest, listening to Teacher Tang's increasingly panicked heartbeat.

Everyone knew that this had really crossed the line, but now was the critical time before the exam, and Tang Shiqi didn't even dare to say no.

For a long while, Chi Lie showed no intention of letting go. Tang Shiqi looked at the dwindling crowd outside the car window and said, " Chi Lie, we have to go to the examination room early. Don't delay us. "

Chi Lie raised his head and rested his chin on Teacher Tang's chest. " Can you accept me like this? "

Tang Shiqi only dared to say nice things now. He put his hand on Chi Lie's shoulder and said, " I have already accepted it. Then don't think too much about it. Do well in the exam. I won't go back on my promise to you. "

Chi Lie nodded against Tang Shiqi's chest, and raised his chin, " Then can you kiss me? In advance. "

Tang Shiqi had to say no, " Don't lie, I didn't agree to kiss you. "

" I didn't say kiss, but kissing my forehead counts as a kiss, so don't think too much about it, Teacher Tang. " He teased, kneeling on the chair like Tang Shiqi, but he was more than half a head taller than Tang Shiqi, " But Teacher Tang clearly agreed that day. You said we could have dinner, watch a movie, hold hands, and kiss. "

Tang Shiqi's eyes widened instantly. He was clearly expressing his admiration for the young couple under the tree that day, and Chi Lie knew it, but now he was playing dumb and refusing to admit it.

He pushed Chi Lie to hide, " You are a scoundrel. "

Chi Lie didn't care, he locked Teacher Tang's waist and pinched her, " Well, I'm a rogue, then can you kiss me? "

The author has something to say:

The cover is a private commission, and commercial authorization has been purchased
Just in case explain

Chapter 34 Preserve His Sleeping Face

34

" Well, I'm a scoundrel, so can you kiss me? " Chi Lie came closer and put his forehead against hers.

He looked at Teacher Tang's panic, his heart jumping to his face. In order to consider his feelings, he did not dare to refuse, but out of responsibility and morality, he could not accept it. Or maybe it's because of sexual orientation or disgust.

He felt sorry for Mr. Tang's inner torment, so he helped him make a choice, " Then I'll kiss you. "

After saying that, without waiting for Teacher Tang's reaction, he raised his head and gave Teacher Tang a light kiss on the top of her head. It was not too offensive.

He let go of Teacher Tang, picked up his ID and stationery, opened the door and got out of the car.

Before closing the car door, he reached out and patted Teacher Tang on the head, his expression and eyes trying to be bitter, " Don't feel burdened, just treat it as if I forced you, or just pretend nothing happened, it doesn't matter what you do. "

After he said this, Tang Shiqi felt guilty, but he didn't know what to do, " Chi Lie ..."

Chi Lie smiled and said, " I'm going to take the exam. Your hug is very useful. Thank you. "

He turned around calmly, as if he was burdened with a huge burden, but in fact he was just about to hop around while walking.

There is no better way to deal with Teacher Tang than to act coquettishly and act pitiful.

Chi Lie studied for one year longer than the others and was also quite smart, so even though he was delayed for a month due to transferring to another school, it did not have much of an impact on him.

Although he is not an invincible academic master, he can barely get into a key university in the capital.

He didn't feel anything different during the exam. He was good at the questions he was usually good at, and there was no sudden improvement in the areas he was not good at. The whole exam was very dull.

He finished answering the questions early and waited for time in boredom. After his attention was diverted from the exercises, the surrounding environment became noisy .

The insects singing in the trees were too loud, and the sound of the wind blowing through the leaves was constant. Adding to the summer heat, it was very disturbing.

When the bell rang and the papers were collected, he could not sit still and rushed out quickly without waiting for Jiang Zhi. He did not look at anyone along the way and went straight to Tang Shiqi's car.

He was running, but slowed down when he got closer to the car. Teacher Tang had opened the window a little and was dozing off on the steering wheel. His heart suddenly calmed down.

He took out his cell phone from his briefcase, took a picture of Teacher Tang's sleeping face through the narrow gap in the car window, and immediately set it as his cell phone screensaver. He stroked the cheek in the photo through the screen, and when he looked up again, Teacher Tang had woken up. He was looking at him through the gap in the car window, with inquiring and a little bit of happiness in his eyes.

Seeing Chi Lie staring at his phone screen with a wandering look in his eyes, Tang Shiqi thought Chi Lie had a new target, so she gossiped, " What are you looking at? There's love in your eyes. "

Taking secret photos would be very embarrassing if caught, but not for Chi Lie, because Teacher Tang was more shameless than anyone he had ever met.

He generously showed the screen of his mobile phone to Tang Shiqi, " Look at you, the light and scenery were just right, so I took a picture. "

What he showed was not the gallery interface, but the screensaver interface.

Seeing that Mr. Tang's cheeks were getting even redder from sleep, he must have regretted describing him as having " heart-like eyes " .

Tang Shiqi turned around, opened his hands, and patted the steering wheel uncomfortably, " Get in the car, we can go back to have a meal and sleep for a while. "

Chi Lie didn't leave, " Aren't you going to wait for Jiang Zhi? "

" Ah ..." Tang Shiqi panicked even more. He actually forgot about his own brother. " Wait, get in the car and wait. It's so hot outside, right? "

" Yes. " Chi Lie took the phone back, but couldn't help stroking it. " I've told you so many times that I like you, why do you always act like it's the first time you hear it? "

He didn't expect to get a response, after all, he was talking to the phone screen, and Tang Shiqi didn't give any answer. He obediently sat back in the car.

What he didn't know was that Tang Shiqi already had the answer in his heart.

Why is he as shy every time as he was the first time he heard it? Because he is sensitive enough, and the emotions and desires that are stronger than the last time are clearly revealed in Chi Lie's eyes.

He can see it.

The two of them were silent in the car for three or two minutes, until Jiang Zhi opened the door and sat in, looking at Tang Shiqi in the rearview mirror, " Brother, please park in the shade. Your face is sunburned like a monkey's butt. If you get hot, go out and find a milk tea shop to sit for a while. You're so hot. "

Hearing this, Chi Lie also looked up. He didn't know what Teacher Tang was thinking in his heart, and his face was even redder than before.

Like ... orgasm.

His throat was dry from his own thoughts and he swallowed to moisten it. In his mind, he had already placed Teacher Tang's face over the naked body in his mind.

He had seen Teacher Tang's arms, calves, slender waist, as well as her chest and buttocks after being soaked in water in the bathroom. These were enough for him to piece together a sweaty and erotic picture.

He turned on the camera on his phone, leaned over to the front seat of the car, rested his chin on the side of the seatback, and stretched out his arm to hold up the phone.

His voice was noticeably hoarse. " Teacher Tang, can you take a photo with me? "

Tang Shiqi saw her own face on the phone screen, as well as Chi Lie's unreserved expression, and felt inexplicably nervous.

He was clearly just a student, a younger brother who was much younger than him, and a younger brother who was extremely obedient most of the time.

He was always being pulled along unconsciously.

It was just a photo, and he had no reason to refuse.

Chi Lie leaned forward a little further, tilted his head and touched the side of Tang Shiqi's head, looked at Tang Shiqi on the screen, and pressed the camera button.

Jiang Zhi was sitting in the back seat with a look of disgust on his face. " Chi Lie, are you so primitive? You like monkey butts. "

Chi Lie ignored him and sat back in the back seat, staring at the phone screen. Unexpectedly, Jiang Zhi came over to look. He blocked it the first time he reacted, but Jiang Zhi still saw it. The photo frames the two people's heads, and without the cover of daily scenes, Tang Shiqi's abnormal blushing and Chi Lie's fierce gaze are infinitely magnified.

" Fuck ..." Jiang Zhi couldn't help but swear, " Fuck you gay . "

The author has something to say:

I really like the atmosphere of this chapter ~

Like it with me

Shut up if you don't like it (bushi)

Chapter 35 He Looks Like a Little Rabbit

35

Chi Lie was confident about the exam, but Jiang Zhi didn't care about it. After two days of exams, Tang Shiqi was no longer so nervous.

On the last afternoon, he listened to Jiang Zhi and found a milk tea shop to sit in. Unexpectedly, the weather was changeable, and when the last show was about to end, a thunder suddenly struck, followed by heavy rain.

The parking spaces near the examination center were already crowded, as were the milk tea shops. Tang Shiqi had to walk for a while before she could barely find a shop.

The weather forecast said it would be sunny today and the spare umbrella was still in the trunk, so he could only pray that it was a rainstorm.

On the other side, students who were preparing to go home after their exams gathered in the corridor.

But the heavy rain could not stop the students' desire for freedom. After the first student ran out, one after another could not hold back.

Jiang Zhi was the type who couldn't hold it in. He didn't want to stay in the teaching building for even a second.

When Jiang Zhi ran out, Chi Lie had to follow him. He didn't want Jiang Zhi to be the first to see Teacher Tang. He wanted to be the first.

The rain was really heavy, and the big raindrops hit his face and it hurt. He followed Jiang Zhi to the school gate, and after finding Tang Shiqi's car, he rushed in first, but found that there was no one inside, and both of them were soaked.

Fortunately, the exam was over and some parents sitting in a nearby milk tea shop began to come out in the rain, leaving some empty seats, so the two had to go in first.

As soon as they stepped in, the cold air from the air conditioner blew on their wet clothes, and they both shivered unconsciously. Everyone felt it was cold, so the only empty seat in the store was the one facing the air conditioner, so they had to sit down.

Chi Lie sent a message to Tang Shiqi, and Tang Shiqi reported his location truthfully and complained.

[TSQ : Who would have thought it would rain at this time? Both of our spare umbrellas are in the car. Let's wait and see. If it doesn't work, we can only run in the rain [crying]]

The three people were waiting at their respective positions. The sky was already overcast and dark after a while, but the rain showed no sign of stopping.

The weather forecast showed that it would rain and it would continue until the next day.

Tang Shiqi was bored and was talking nonsense to Chi Lie. Her words revealed that she wanted to run out in the rain and go home first.

Chi Lie looked out from the glass door of the milk tea shop. The rain was getting heavier than before and there was water accumulating on the roadside.

Teacher Tang is wearing a white short-sleeved shirt today. It would be bad if it got dirty or dropped.

He was worried about Tang Shiqi as if he was worried about a child, and completely forgot that he was also wearing a white T-shirt today .

He picked up his phone and told Jiang Zhi to get an umbrella. Before Jiang Zhi could figure out what was going on, he had already rushed out.

He looked through the chat history and found Tang Shiqi's address. It took him about three or four minutes to get there. His clothes, which had been half-dried by the air conditioner, became soaked again.

He rushed into the store, and before entering, he did not forget to lift up his wet bangs to make himself look less disheveled.

" Teacher Tang. " He found Tang Shiqi's location at a glance, " Give me the car keys, I'll get an umbrella and come back to pick you up. "

Tang Shiqi was confused. How come the person who she was chatting with across the screen just now was suddenly in front of her?

He was in a daze and had little ability to think, so he just did whatever Chi Lie said and took the car keys from the table and handed them to Chi Lie.

Chi Lie was afraid of dirtying Teacher Tang, so he took the car keys between his index finger and thumb, and without waiting a moment, turned around and ran out again.

When he went in, he saw Teacher Tang shivering and rubbing his hands. He had to hurry so that he wouldn't feel cold when he got home.

He successfully found Tang Shiqi's car, got the umbrella, and looking at his overall condition, he instinctively felt that it was useless to hold the umbrella. He was too lazy to even take off the umbrella cover, and turned around and ran towards where Tang Shiqi was.

He thought he was running quite fast, and he saw Tang Shiqi standing in front of the glass door waiting for him from a distance, so he opened his umbrella.

Although it was not a big deal, he felt a great sense of accomplishment and smiled brightly, " Teacher Tang, I'm here to pick you up. "

Teacher Tang looked at him with a complicated look , as if mixed with many kinds of emotions.

There was no need to wait long. Teacher Tang opened the door and walked towards him. There were two steps in front of the milk tea shop, and almost half of the first step had been flooded.

Chi Lie raised the umbrella over Tang Shiqi's head and saw that Teacher Tang's shoes were water-permeable canvas shoes, so he stretched out his other hand to block them.

He looked up and said, " Let me carry you over. "

After saying that, he stuffed the umbrella into Tang Shiqi's hand, took off his wet shirt, wrung it hard, climbed up a step, and wiped his upper body clean.

He moved so fast that Tang Shiqi had no time to stop him. Her eyes were avoiding the exposed abdominal muscles in front of her. " No need to carry me. Just wade over there. "

Chi Lie ignored it, turned his back to Tang Shiqi, tilted his head and said: " If you still need to tread water, what's the point of me coming to pick you up? Hurry up and go home. "

He had assumed his pose and was ready to take off his clothes, not allowing anyone to refuse.

Tang Shiqi held the umbrella in one hand and hooked Chi Lie's neck with the other hand. Using her elbow to leverage Chi Lie's shoulders, she jumped onto Chi Lie's back.

Even though it was raining so heavily and I was soaked just now, with even my hair still dripping, Chi Lie's back was warm.

The temperature dropped so low that Teacher Tang unconsciously moved closer to him and wiped the rain off the sides of his face with the back of his hand.

He was afraid that Teacher Tang would fall, so he stopped running. Instead, he held Teacher Tang's soft legs with his big hands and walked towards the parking space step by step.

Students having fun and venting their emotions on the roadside, parents moving luggage in the rain, shop owners closing up their stalls and going home. Even though they have been waiting for a while, there are still quite a lot of people and cars on the road, and there is a traffic jam.

Chi Lie walked around the cars and people going in different directions, and occasionally met a few classmates he knew, or classmates who knew him.

Because of his good looks, many people noticed him. After asking around, almost everyone in the school knew that he was a psychopathic homosexual.

" exclusion " and " cold eyes " when he wanted Teacher Tang's comfort . At other times, he didn't care much.

But today is different.

It was raining heavily, and the people who were moving luggage and books were all busy, so he didn't stand out much as he was carrying someone on his back.

Unfortunately, he and a few other boys were caught in a traffic jam at an intersection and had to stop for a while.

" Hey, is that person Chi Lie? "

" Which Chi Lie? "

" I like the male one. "

" Oh ~ "

Chi Lie was already used to this kind of conversation, and he didn't react at all until ...

" Hey, he's carrying a man, right? "

" Fuck ... He's not wearing any clothes, what a homosexual. "

" Dog Man Man. "

The boys' talk was not loud, and with the sound of rain and the noise of the street , under normal circumstances, he would not have bothered to pay attention and could have pretended not to hear it.

But those people were not just talking about him today.

If he hadn't been holding Teacher Tang in his arms, his fist would have landed where it should have. He was already thinking about what excuse he could make to teach this group of people a lesson after sending Teacher Tang back to the car.

He wasn't one to use his fists much, unless he was really angry.

" It's okay. " Tang Shiqi.

He clenched his fists to restrain himself, but Teacher Tang whispered this in his ear.

Teacher Tang straightened up slightly behind him and pinched his shoulder and neck muscles that were tense from exerting too much force. " If it's because of me, it's okay. I'm not angry, and you shouldn't be angry either. "

It was clear that he didn't say anything profound, but as soon as Teacher Tang's voice came out, his anger subsided by half.

He calmed down and said, " I'm sorry that I got you scolded as well. "

Tang Shiqi shook her head, then realized that Chi Lie couldn't see her, so she lay back down again, resting her chin on Chi Lie's shoulder, and shook her head again.

He had no idea that this kind of intimacy was a huge test for Chi Lie.

He didn't care much about what was in the dog's mouth. He just held Chi Lie's neck tightly and whispered in Chi Lie's ear: " The cars ahead have dispersed. Let's go home. It's so cold. "

Chi Lie said hoarsely, " Okay, I'll listen to Teacher Tang. "

He took a step forward , and Teacher Tang leaned her head on his shoulder, her thin ears rubbing against his shoulder, and he felt as if he was carrying a kind little rabbit on his back. Light and soft.

The author has something to say:

The college entrance examination is over, and you can prepare for " dating "

Chapter 36 His wrist bones are round

36

After trekking through mountains and rivers, the two finally reached the car.

Chi Lie changed his hands, trying to support Teacher Tang's legs with one hand behind his back, and then free up one hand to open the car door.

He was confident in his arm strength, and Teacher Tang was so light that he could change hands smoothly.

But Teacher Tang, who was being carried on his back, couldn't help but feel scared. After noticing that Chi Lie wanted to open the car door in this state, she felt unsure and subconsciously bent her legs and wrapped them around Chi Lie's waist.

Chi Lie paused as he opened the car door, and suddenly regretted saying he would carry Teacher Tang on his back. It would have been much better if he had carried Teacher Tang from the front.

Teacher Tang was a well-behaved man, and even his trouser legs covered his ankles exactly. With this movement, his round ankles were exposed, dotted with a few raindrops blown in by the slanting wind, like porcelain.

I want to hold it, bite it, and kiss it.

The wind was strong enough to make Teacher Tang shiver on his back. He had to come back to his senses and open the door to see him off.

He turned around and half squatted down. Teacher Tang sat directly on his back into the car.

He was almost not exposed to the rain and his shoes were clean, not wet at all.

Chi Lie handed the car keys to Tang Shiqi and wanted to sit in the passenger seat, but except for his upper body, his entire body was like a walking sprinkler truck.

Teacher Tang likes cleanliness, and he also likes cleanliness. He looked at his muddy trouser legs and shoe soles, feeling a little disgusted with himself. " I have an umbrella anyway, so I can walk back? "

Tang Shiqi used Chi Lie's words to choke him, " What's the point of me driving here if I still want you to get wet in the rain? "

Chi Lie smiled, still feeling that he was dirty, " Forget it, go pick up Jiang Zhi, he should be almost done by now. "

I really want to go, anyway, it's fine as long as Teacher Tang is okay. The rain is getting lighter now, except for the water under my feet which is a little inconvenient, there is nothing else.

But how could Tang Shiqi let him go? Why did he have to go out in the rain? Seeing Chi Liezhen turned around, he was anxious and said something without thinking, " Then why don't you take off your pants too! "

The two looked at each other, the air was very awkward, and the sound of rain seemed to have stopped.

Tang Shiqi laughed dryly twice, put his finger on his brow and looked away, " I don't mean anything else, come on up, you have to wash the car anyway when it rains, it's dirty so it's dirty. "

Chi Lie's mind suddenly opened up. He looked around and found that the place where he was standing was blocked by the car, and there was no one behind him for the time being.

Holding an umbrella in one hand and putting the other hand into his waistband, Chi Lie quickly stripped off his lower body. He wrung out his pants and wiped them a little, then took a step forward and sat on the passenger seat before passing anyone.

Maybe she didn't expect him to really take it off, Teacher Tang's eyes widened and she stuttered, " You, you ... , I ... , forget it, let's go pick up Jiang Zhi. "

Throughout the entire journey, Teacher Tang drove without looking around, and when he turned his head to talk, he almost looked at the top of his head.

He thought it was interesting. It was not like he had not seen it before, so why was he so shy?

He wiped away the sporadic raindrops on his hair and said casually, " Teacher Tang, the rain is too heavy. My underwear is wet too. "

I turned my head to look, and Teacher Tang seemed to be holding his breath, " You are not allowed to take this off. "

He tilted his head and smiled, " Teacher Tang, I just lamented that it was raining so hard, I didn't mean to take it off. "

Tang Shiqi blushed, " ... Oh, here we are, send a WeChat message to Xiao Zhi and ask him to come out. "

The car stopped in front of the milk tea shop. Chi Lie opened half of the car window and threw a folded umbrella to Jiang Zhi who was waiting at the door.

He threw it accurately, but Jiang Zhi struggled twice before catching it. His chin and eyeballs were about to fall to the ground. He stretched out his finger and pointed at the rain, " It's immoral! "

Chi Lie didn't like this word. He frowned and turned away, closing all the car windows without saying a word.

He caught a glimpse of Teacher Tang stretching out his hand, perhaps wanting to pat his shoulder and comfort him, but unfortunately he was naked, so Teacher Tang retracted his hand halfway through.

Jiang Zhi opened the umbrella and got into the car. He wanted to criticize Chi Lie for his hooligan behavior. He leaned forward and found that Chi Lie was in a hooligan state. He sat with his legs apart without any restraint or covering.

" Fuck ! " Jiang Zhi grabbed the backs of the seats on both sides and squeezed in between the two of them. " I was wondering why you took so long. I'm in here enjoying the cool breeze while you guys are having sex in the car ! "

Chi Lie raised his eyebrows without explaining, just looking at Tang Shiqi who was still anxious. Teacher Tang becomes tongue-tied when he is anxious. After explaining for a long time, he just keeps repeating the same things: "No, that's not right" and "Don't talk nonsense."

But he had no intention of helping. He was happy to see Teacher Tang fall into this insignificant helplessness. Teacher Tang was very beautiful at this time.

Perhaps it was because her skin was too fair, but whenever she got a little emotional, color would appear on Teacher Tang's cheeks and ears. Her expression would become pitiful, and the emotions in her eyes would be more vivid than usual.

What a pity, he was looking at Jiang Zhi with such eyes. It was such a waste of talent . It should have been given to him.

Just as he was thinking this, Teacher Tang leaned towards him. He must have lost the argument and came to him for help, asking him to explain.

He was thinking just now that Teacher Tang's eyes should only be directed at him, but now that Teacher Tang turned to him, he regretted it.

Teacher Tang's eyes are only suitable for watching from a distance . Once you look closely, you can't resist the urge to play with them.

He prepared for a rainy day by moving the wet clothes on his side to cover his legs. He turned his eyes to Jiang Zhi and said, " The road was full of parents of classmates carrying luggage, and there were a lot of cars, so it was difficult to walk and that wasted time. "

He needed an outlet to vent his anger, so he had to turn all the other shameful things he had suppressed into words and anger, and vented it on the unlucky Jiang Zhi. " You should be careful when you joke. Can't you see that he feels embarrassed? "

Jiang Zhi didn't think he had done anything wrong, but when it came to Tang Shiqi, he became timid, hugged his schoolbag, lowered his head and kept silent.

But Chi Lie had no intention of stopping, because Teacher Tang was still looking at him. Even though they didn't make eye contact, he could feel the gaze as if it were real.

It's not that Teacher Tang's eyes are so explicit and passionate, but in Chi Lie's eyes, Teacher Tang is always explicit and passionate.

So he needs to keep talking, keep releasing.

But was stopped.

This time, Teacher Tang was finally willing to extend his hand. His wrist was held, and Teacher Tang shook his head, still looking a little embarrassed. " Let's go home first. It's just a joke. It's okay. "

He thought that Teacher Tang's touch would make him even more unable to control himself, but he didn't expect that Teacher Tang's touch could cure all poisons. Looking at the slightly pleading eyes cast towards him, he felt that his thoughts were too dirty and too sinful. He pinched Teacher Tang's wrist with his backhand and rubbed his wrist bone, but he was actually trying to calm down his anger.

He touched someone's wrist for no reason. He knew that Teacher Tang was suspicious and looking at him, but he didn't let go. Because he suddenly realized that now that the college entrance examination was over, Teacher Tang was already his " boyfriend " .

" Okay. " He released his thumb from massaging, and a round pink mark appeared on his wrist bone. " Then let's go home. "

Tomorrow, you will be my boyfriend.

The author has something to say:

The rain is not worthy of getting Teacher Tang wet, only Chi Lie is worthy

A new phase begins from the next chapter

The beginning of a relationship deterioration

There should be a plot that everyone wants to see

from entering the v- game will be drawn after the game is over.

Follow-up notification

#HeOccupiesMySummer

Chapter 37 The Hair on His Ankles

37

After a lot of trouble, the three of them finally returned home. They took a shower, ate, and cleaned up their dirty clothes. By the time they lay down on the bed, it was already past eleven o'clock.

The month of exams took up too much of Tang Shiqi's energy and he didn't have much time to stretch or practice martial arts.

So when Chi Lie finished his shower, calmed down, and walked out of the bathroom, he saw Teacher Tang stretching her legs on the carpet.

Teacher Tang spread her legs into a soft line, stretched her arms forward, and stretched her upper body forward as far as she could, almost touching the ground.

Chi Lie didn't understand all this. He didn't know what Teacher Tang was practicing, because as soon as he went out, his attention was attracted by the bulging area below Teacher Tang's lower back.

The pajamas were thin but stretched flat, with the black corners faintly visible at the edges, creating a distinct and cute shape, like two clouds.

Teacher Tang was trying very hard and was still leaning forward. Perhaps it had been a while since he had practiced this way, so the movements were not very easy and he cried out in pain quietly while doing it.

He stood at the bathroom door, unable to move, watching Teacher Tang's loose pajamas floating with her movements, the hem sometimes covering her roundness, then revealing it, brushing against her waist.

He felt that the hem of Teacher Tang's skirt was a demon that was determined to lead his gaze astray, disturb his calm mind, and rekindle his suppressed desire.

Perhaps because his breathing was too obvious, Teacher Tang stopped and turned his head hesitantly .

He didn't restrain his expression either.

He used to be restrained because he was afraid that Teacher Tang would be scared, afraid that Teacher Tang would be distant , avoid him, and keep him away from him. He still wanted to test the bottom line and then push further.

But not now.

Teacher Tang had promised him that she would accompany him throughout the summer vacation without any restrictions. So, no matter how outrageous he was, this agreement could not be broken.

Just like now, his breathing and his body expressed his thoughts very clearly and explicitly, and Teacher Tang also noticed it.

But he had no intention of covering it up, and even walked towards Teacher Tang.

" Chi Lie, you go to sleep first. You can also turn off the lights. " Teacher Tang retracted her legs and spoke a little faster, as if to stop him from getting closer.

But he didn't listen. He walked over with a bath towel around him, squatted in front of Tang Shiqi, and reached out to pinch a hair stuck on Tang Shiqi's ankle.

That hair is also fairy, dark brown, from Tang Shiqi.

Half of it was hidden in Teacher Tang's trouser leg, and the other half was sticking out, resting on Teacher Tang's ankle.

He pinched it and pulled it out, a short piece, and he pulled it very slowly. How could it not feel itchy when the tip of the hair touched the skin so gently?

He looked at Teacher Tang's toes which kept curling up because of the itch, and couldn't get enough of it, so he tucked the short hair back in in a mean way.

It's like when you see an interesting plot in a drama, you want to watch it again and drag the progress bar manually.

Tang Shiqi originally planned to sit and wait for death. He could understand something. The more he refused to resist, the more Chi Lie would think about it. So he planned to do nothing and leave when Chi Lie had enough fun.

But he didn't fully understand it, especially the fact that Chi Lie was a scoundrel.

He didn't expect that the hair he had taken out could be put back in. For a moment, he forgot about the ambiguous and embarrassing atmosphere and felt very amused.

Chi Lie didn't care how Teacher Tang reacted and just did what he wanted to do.

When he tried to pull her out again, Teacher Tang refused to give in and retracted her foot. His hand chased after her, but Teacher Tang retreated even further away .

In the end, Teacher Tang's heels were pressed against her legs, but he was still pulled back by her ankles.

Just like massaging his wrist bones during the day, he became interested in Tang Shiqi's ankle bones.

But Mr. Tang's patience seemed to have run out. Even though he was holding his fist in his hand, he still kicked him on the knee with a little force.

His center of balance was unstable and his body fell backwards. In order to avoid taking Teacher Tang down with him, he reluctantly let go, his eyes still watching Teacher Tang's every move.

Teacher Tang gave up on the basic training and rolled his eyes at him inconspicuously, muttering, "Childish, I don't know what you are doing. "

His eyes followed Teacher Tang's movements and he felt that Teacher Tang's ideas were too simple. He was not playing house and what was in his mind had nothing to do with childishness. The timely ringing of the phone interrupted the strange atmosphere. Teacher Tang took out his cell phone and went out to answer it. He also sat up from the carpet.

He hadn't looked at his phone much all day, and as soon as he opened it, there were double-digit messages. There were several messages from his parents and cousin, asking him how he did on the exam.

He didn't want to reply or read the message, but he couldn't help but open his mother's message box.

[Baby, mommy will pick you up tomorrow, okay? Your dad has calmed down.]

[Go and admit your mistake to your father. No matter what you think in your heart, at least try to show your sincerity.]

Yes, he is almost twenty years old, and his mother still calls him baby. He can also feel the so-called family affection and maternal love from his mother, but it is hard to accept.

"Baby, it's okay. Mom understands you. Just find a girlfriend in the future. "

"Baby, be obedient and transfer to another school. It will be fine when your classmates forget about it. After all, it was you who caused the bad influence. "

"Baby, don't worry about affecting your grades. Your family can give you a good future. Just listen to your dad and find a girlfriend. Be good. "

The kidnapping wrapped in the shell of family affection makes people feel uncomfortable from the bottom of their hearts.

【CL : If the superficial effort you're talking about is getting a girlfriend, that's impossible.】

After he replied, he turned off his phone completely. He didn't know how to face his parents. Especially mom.

His mother never beat or scolded him. She did everything for him wholeheartedly and controlled and arranged everything for him gently. It would be unfilial of him to resist, but he couldn't accept it either. He could only avoid her.

He threw himself down on the bed in exhaustion, looked at the empty space beside him, stretched out his arm, and gathered his fingers in the void, but caught nothing.

I had no choice but to turn my head and stare at the door, waiting for Teacher Tang to come back, because Teacher Tang could be caught.

But Teacher Tang's mother seemed to be a very nice person, and their phone calls would always last a long time.

He moved to Teacher Tang's position out of boredom, hugged Teacher Tang's quilt, buried his face in it unsatisfiedly, and couldn't help taking a deep sniff.

Everything about Teacher Tang made him addicted, so addicted that he could trace Teacher Tang's body language by following the smell and imagine Teacher Tang's voice and expression. He wanted to forget the news his mother had just given him. The more he wanted to escape reality, the easier it was for him to fall into a dream.

He used his hands and feet to hold the quilt tighter and tighter, so much so that he did not hear the door open, nor did he see Teacher Tang walking towards the bed.

The author has something to say:

The second volume has begun, a new stage

Because I'm a v- player , I'll be more diligent in updating in the future

Follow with confidence

Chapter 38 He said I had a fever

" ... Chi Lie? " Teacher Tang's voice sounded above his head, cautiously, " What are you doing? "

He raised half of his face from under the covers.

Teacher Tang is his mirror. He cannot see what his current condition is, but he can know it from Teacher Tang's facial expressions.

What he was thinking must be written on his face.

Tang Shiqi took a step back and hesitated , " Chi Lie, can I still ask to sleep separately? "

Chi Lie hugged the quilt, " What do you think? "

Tang Shiqi seized the opportunity, " I think I can. "

Chi Lie sat up, piled the quilt in front of him and hugged it, grabbing two handfuls, but his eyes were fixed on Teacher Tang, which made Teacher Tang blush.

He issued an ultimatum: " I don't think so. "

Teacher Tang used herself as a bargaining chip, " But I will still hold your hand and hug you. I didn't tell you because I was afraid that it would affect your mood during your exam preparation period. I still think it's weird for us to sleep together . It's not your problem, it's just me who feels awkward. "

" If you don't do anything wrong, you don't have to worry about ghosts knocking on your door. " He tilted his head and looked at Tang Shiqi, laughing at him, " Why are you feeling guilty? "

" I have no guilty conscience ..."

" If you don't feel guilty, go to bed. It's late and I'm sleepy. "

After saying that, he spread out Teacher Tang's quilt, covered himself with it, lay down and closed his eyes, not giving anyone a chance to struggle.

This kind of strength always works for Teacher Tang .

Sure enough, he heard Teacher Tang sigh, then quietly turned off the light and went to bed. Since he had taken her place, he had no choice but to walk to the other side, lie down in his usual sleeping position, and sleep in the quilt he had covered.

He was a little excited, and wanted to make up for his regret of missing the target just now, so he reached out to Teacher Tang again.

Teacher Tang noticed something and reached out from under the quilt to hold his hand down. "What are you doing again? "

He had no intention of taking it back and asked what was on his mind, "Teacher Tang, can you smell the odor on the quilt? "

Tang Shiqi was confused, "Ah? We take a shower every day, how come there is a smell? "

Chi Lie : " "

He didn't know whether to laugh or cry, "That's not what I meant. It's the unique smell of each person. "

Teacher Tang did not answer immediately. The air was silent for a few seconds before he asked, "What do you want to say? "

He kindly explained: "Teacher Tang's quilt smells good. "

Tang Shiqi : " "

Tang Shiqi didn't want to pay attention to him, he was like a little pervert. If you say he was a hooligan, it wasn't that serious. If you say he was just chatting, it wasn't that simple either.

"threw " Chi Lie's hand aside, "Go to sleep quickly. "

But he felt Chi Lie's hand reaching out again. He smiled helplessly, "It's almost past twelve o'clock. Are you so excited after the exam? "

Chi Lie stopped being sneaky and openly put his arm on Teacher Tang's arm through the quilt. "Well, I can finally date Teacher Tang. "

" " Tang Shiqi was not happy, "If you keep talking nonsense, I will be angry with you. "

Chi Lie patted the back of Tang Shiqi's hand and coaxed her, "I won't say anything anymore. I will strictly follow Teacher Tang's rules. We are just making memories. "

Teacher Tang was really sleepy and tired, so she didn't respond. However, Chi Lie had an unexpectedly strong desire to express himself, and he moved closer to Teacher Tang without leaving any trace . "Teacher Tang, I want to hold your hand now. "

Apart from dancing, the most important thing in Teacher Tang's life is probably sleeping. Maybe he was too sleepy to talk, so he didn't respond.

Chi Lie didn't feel like he was hitting a wall. He liked Teacher Tang. As long as it was Teacher Tang, he would find it interesting even if it was just for his own amusement.

It rained today and it was cold at night. I didn't turn on the air conditioner and just covered myself with a summer quilt of moderate thickness.

Through the quilt, Chi Lie's fingertips traced the back of Teacher Tang's hand, sometimes drawing a circle, sometimes a five-pointed star. He found everything he did on Teacher Tang interesting.

At first, Mr. Tang's breathing rate was a little flustered, but when he was about to draw the twenty-eight-pointed star, Mr. Tang 's breathing was steady and he was almost falling asleep.

The trick of boiling a frog in warm water is the best strategy for the good-tempered teacher Tang.

So he was not satisfied with just touching her through the quilt, so he found the gap in the quilt, slowly put his hand in, and little by little he felt Teacher Tang's fingertips.

Teacher Tang didn't react, so he inserted his five fingers into Teacher Tang's fingers one by one, closing them little by little, pressing them tightly, until they were truly interlocked, and Teacher Tang still didn't notice at all.

He was greatly encouraged by Teacher Tang's defenselessness, and the desire that had been pent up until now suddenly burst out. He swallowed his saliva, turned over and covered Teacher Tang, keeping some distance between them so that Teacher Tang would not be crushed.

He slowly leaned forward, moved closer, and placed his hands on both sides of Teacher Tang's head.

He didn't know what he wanted to do. Even though he was usually calm in times of crisis, his pounding heartbeat had blocked his hearing. He didn't even know what he would do next and was completely guided by his body instincts.

He felt that he was very weird now. After all, he rarely had such ridiculous moments.

Teacher Tang had not yet fallen into a deep sleep, so it was hard for him to not be noticed for such a bold move. Teacher Tang opened his eyes drowsily, but was not frightened at all. He just frowned slightly in dissatisfaction, "What are you going to do again ..."

The imagined struggle and fright did not come. Teacher Tang was still the same gentle Teacher Tang, accepting all his weirdness and insolence.

He said in a hoarse voice, "Aren't you afraid of me? Afraid that I might do something to you?"

Teacher Tang just smiled, her voice was like honey, sticky and stringy, "Don't be afraid, you said you are not that kind of person, and you won't do anything to me, I believe you."

Chi Lie was stunned. After receiving such a reply, he really didn't have the face to do anything. But he still felt that something was not right with him. His breath felt hot when it hit his philtrum. Part of it was fueled by desire and love, and he couldn't tell the other part.

Until Teacher Tang stretched her arms out from under the quilt and opened them to him, "You want to hold hands, do you want to hug me? Come on, hug me and then let me go to sleep."

At this moment, his hands inexplicably wanted to grab Teacher Tang's waist. He tried his best to restrain himself, clenched the quilt on both sides, supported himself and pressed down, leaning into Teacher Tang's open arms.

He was clearly not sleepy, but his head felt dizzy, and after lying down, he had no strength to get up.

Tang Shiqi paused, and the hand that was reaching for Chi Lie's back turned upwards, pressing against Chi Lie's cheek and forehead, waking up halfway from his sleep.

He said anxiously, "Chi Lie, do you have a fever?!"

Chi Lie nestled in the crook of Tang Shiqi's neck. The familiar scent made him feel comfortable and obsessed. He felt satisfied and his consciousness gradually left.

No wonder you are so talkative and impatient today, it turns out you have a fever.

That's great. When he had a fever, he could only lie on Teacher Tang's bed, wrapped in Teacher Tang's quilt, and receive Teacher Tang's care.

He lay on Teacher Tang and fell into a deep sleep.

The author has something to say:

When Mr. Tang is confused, the sound of his voice is bouncy and can be drawn (bushi)

Chapter 39 His Fingertips

39

After being caught in the rain for so long and without the college entrance examination to worry about, Chi Lie unfortunately caught a fever.

In fact, he seldom has a fever. On the one hand, his physical fitness is indeed good. On the other hand, his parents were too busy when he was a child, and getting sick seemed to be unacceptable if no one cared about him.

He has had good physical fitness since he was a child. He had an uncontrollable fever last night, but he felt much better this morning.

But he wasn't going to recover yet.

He slept too deeply last night and had no memory of whether Teacher Tang took care of him.

He had to make up for it during the day today.

The door was opened and Teacher Tang came in with a bowl of porridge. Seeing that he woke up, she walked over quickly and put the porridge on the bedside.

I put my hand on his forehead and said, " It's not too hot now. Sit up and eat something. "

He didn't move. Isn't feeding a patient the most basic thing ?

He deliberately only half opened his eyelids, sat up slowly, and then leaned against the headboard in an exaggeratedly weak manner.

He stretched out his arm to pick up the bowl even more slowly, as if the bowl weighed a thousand pounds. He had only brought it a fingertip's distance from the cabinet when he put it down as if he couldn't bear the weight, and the porridge even swayed out of the edge of the bowl.

He didn't say anything, but frowned and went to get it for the second time. Finally, before he touched the edge of the bowl, he got help from Teacher Tang.

A hand that was smaller than his easily picked up the bowl, and Teacher Tang sat sideways on the bedside. " How about I feed you, do you mind? "

He shook his head. He wanted it more than ever.

The porridge, which should have been tasteless, was fed into his mouth mouthful by mouthful.

He tasted it with his feverish bitter taste buds, but he found it sweet.

Teacher Tang pinched the spoon with her fingertips and put it into his mouth. He stared at it and rolled the porridge into his mouth with his tongue, as if he was holding Teacher Tang's fingers.

He used his imagination and illusion to satisfy his burning desire, but found that something was wrong with Teacher Tang.

Logically speaking, no matter what dirty things he was thinking about, Teacher Tang would not be able to know. They were just simply feeding him now.

But Teacher Tang's movements and expressions looked very uncomfortable.

He probed with his eyes, but Teacher Tang dodged everywhere.

He felt uncomfortable like this. He wanted to know what Teacher Tang was thinking. He wanted to be in control.

So after Teacher Tang once again fed the spoon to his mouth, he raised his hand and grabbed Teacher Tang's wrist. The spoon tilted, and the porridge spilled out and was mostly caught by the bowl, but a few grains of rice still flowed onto Teacher Tang's fingers.

He didn't care about that. " Teacher Tang, why do I feel like you're avoiding me? "

Teacher Tang's eyelids twitched, and he didn't notice Chi Lie's sudden recovery of strength and his powerful voice.

He just raised his head cautiously, his eyelashes fluttering, " What happened last night, have you ... forgotten? "

Chi Lie was stunned. Being questioned like this, he felt as if he had slept with someone and then forgot about it after putting on his pants.

But that's impossible. If he had slept with Teacher Tang, he would definitely remember every detail clearly. He would even want to write a record book and have it engraved on his urn after he died.

He relaxed a little, and suddenly felt unsure. He asked tentatively: " What happened last night ? "

Teacher Tang's ears and cheeks suddenly turned red. " It's okay, it's nothing serious, forget it. " Chi Lie didn't let go.

Tang Shiqi thought back to last night. He didn't want to tell Chi Lie at all.

Last night, he also slept in a daze. When he opened his eyes, he didn't realize that Chi Lie's actions were too ambiguous. He just felt that after giving Chi Lie what he wanted, he could sleep peacefully.

Chi Lie's body was too hot when he lay in his arms, and his cheek was pressed against his exposed neck, steaming with heat.

He suddenly realized that Chi Lie was sick and had a fever. He wanted to find medicine and pour some water, but Chi Lie suddenly felt even more stressed.

It turned out that Chi Lie was holding up his body because he was afraid of crushing him.

Now, let alone pouring water or finding medicine, he even had difficulty breathing.

He tried to wake up the person on top of him, " Chi Lie, can you please turn your body a little? "

The person on his body didn't move, so he continued to coax her, " You have a fever. I'll go get you some medicine. When I come back, we'll continue hugging, okay? "

The person on his body seemed to have some reaction, and arched his head against his shoulder and neck, " Tang Shiqi ... "

Chi Lie had rarely called him by his full name, so for a moment he had the illusion that he was being called. He straightened his back with difficulty, " ... Yeah, I'm here. "

Chi Lie's breathing fluctuated a little, " Tang Shiqi, I like you so much ... "

" I like you ... " As she said that, she pursed her lips and kissed him on the side of his neck before he could even resist.

In fact, he had heard this many times and should have become accustomed to it, but the reality was always the opposite. He became more and more embarrassed and shaken each time.

The pursuit of young people is the most difficult to resist. Their disadvantage is that they have nothing, but their advantage is still that they have nothing. They hold their only pure and sincere heart, and no one has the heart to break it.

He lied, he was not straight, his ex was a doctor, a man, three years older than him. He didn't want to recall the unhappy ending, and he planned to keep his sexual orientation, which was not favored by the public, a secret buried deep in this small county town. Before, Chi Lie was a high school student, a high school student who had not yet entered society and was the same age as his younger brother. Regardless of his true thoughts, just based on his identity and age, he had never thought of accepting this possibility. He even issued a veto saying " I am straight " .

But Chi Lie doesn't care. Chi Lie doesn't even want to respond, admit, or take responsibility. Still holding the sincere love, I have to settle for the next best thing, just a beautiful memory. He had never seriously thought about his thoughts, because he was simple-minded, he felt that he did not plan to fall in love again, and Chi Lie was also in a spur of the moment, so he thought that the two of them would only be in a relationship of " memories " .

When the time limit is reached, it will be cut off cleanly.

But now Chi Lie has already left the identity of a high school student. This should have been a relief for Chi Lie, but instead it made him feel relieved, as if morality had removed a layer of shackles from him.

The moment Chi Lie kissed him, his mind was filled with Chi Lie's hot breath saying " I like you so much " .

Before today, his thought would be: Chi Lie has crossed the line, they can't do this. Now he could only hear his own heartbeat.

The college entrance examination was an important node in Chi Lie's life, but it became an opportunity for his ideological change.

He thought about the reason for his heartbeat. In such a short period of time, it should not be enough to express love. But at that moment, he no longer considered Chi Lie as his younger brother.

He officially put Chi Lie in the position of a pursuer, and was briefly moved by the pursuer's behavior.

He had no time to trace when this change occurred, he just felt helpless and torn.

Before he could figure it out, Chi Lie started to be annoying again, rubbing his hot nose against his neck, " I like you ..."

Then, as naturally as possible, she pressed her lips against his skin.

Before he could tell whether it was an accident or a kiss, he felt a strange touch further down. Is this the energy of a 19- year-old now? He can't stop even if he has a fever.

He wanted to hide, and moved away by grabbing the edge of the bed, but he unexpectedly had more contact. The change in his thinking and the physical contact made him unexpectedly realize that he and Chi Lie had become in the same state.

How could he tell Chi Lie all this? Regardless of feelings and morals, he was unwilling to say it just for the sake of his face.

The author has something to say:
Others: Smoking cuts your lungs
Chi Lie: Joint burial, carved urn

Chapter 40 : Take Him In Your Arms

40

Chi Lie still held Teacher Tang's wrist, waiting for Teacher Tang to give him an answer, but he watched Teacher Tang's face getting redder and redder, from an apple to a tomato and then a lantern.

Finally, she stammered and told him, " You were lying on top of me and poked me. "

His eyes widened for a moment, then he smiled, " Is that it? It's not like it hasn't happened before. "

Teacher Tang avoided looking at him, " It's different. "

He thought the awkward Teacher Tang was cute, and asked, " What's different? The venue? The feeling? "

Teacher Tang raised his eyes and glared at him, but without saying a word, he let go and was about to leave.

There was no way he would just let the person go like that. He was holding the person's wrist so that he couldn't break free.

There were still a few drops of porridge spilled from Teacher Tang's fingertips, which were sticky white. The picture in his mind tended to be restricted. He forgot what he was going to do and stared at the neatly trimmed fingertips.

Suddenly, he couldn't bear it any longer, leaned forward, took Teacher Tang's fingertips into his mouth, rolled up a few drops of cold porridge, and without letting go, sucked on it like a baby. When he looked up, Teacher Tang's eyes were filled with shock as if he had discovered a new world . " How could you do this? "

Chi Lie kneaded Teacher Tang's knuckles, " Why are you so surprised? You promised me. "

Tang Shiqi tried to pull his hand back, but it was like a gnat trying to shake a tree in front of Chi Lie's strength. He could only defend himself with his mouth.

Tang Shiqi: " I never promised this, don't lie to me. "

Chi Lie was afraid that he would hurt the person, so he loosened his grip a little, allowing Teacher Tang to escape and savor the taste of his fingers.

Chi Lie: " You promised to hold hands, and my tongue wants to hold hands with Teacher Tang. "

Tang Shiqi had never heard of such shameless talk, and before she could refute it, she heard Chi Lieyou start talking nonsense again.

Although Chi Lie was much better, he still had a minor cold. He felt dizzy again, so he leaned back on the bed and said lazily, " I poked Teacher Tang's spot yesterday, and I also wanted to hold Teacher Tang's hand. "

At this point, Teacher Tang's exposed parts of his body turned red, and he stood up suddenly, " You rascal! Lie down and rest, I'll go sit for a while. "

After saying that, he ran away without looking back.

He had no choice but to feed himself and finish the bowl of porridge. The fever had messed up his taste buds, and the porridge that had been sweet just now was now so bland that it was difficult to swallow.

Chi Lie originally wanted to pretend for two or three days, and use pity to cuddle up with Teacher Tang, but by the afternoon, he could no longer pretend.

Teacher Tang said he had a fever and was not allowed to turn on the air conditioner, so he successfully experienced sweating profusely.

Teacher Tang also realized that he was pretending, so without saying anything else, she poured him hot water, cooked hot porridge, and covered him with two layers of quilts.

It was not until Chi Lie suspected that his fever was turning into heatstroke that he grabbed Teacher Tang's hand that was tucking in the quilt for him.

Tang Shiqi smiled as usual, " What's wrong? People with fever are afraid of cold, do you want to cover yourself with another layer? "

Chi Lie could see a little pride in his smile, so he had to pretend to be pitiful and beg for mercy, " I was wrong, Teacher Tang, please turn on the air conditioner for me, I won't have a fever anymore. "

Tang Shiqi was rarely mean, and put the back of her hand on the side of his face, " Don't talk nonsense, your face is so hot, take a rest. "

Chi Lie couldn't help laughing, " It's hot. I'm going to get heat stroke soon. I was so wrong, good teacher — dear teacher— "

He begged in a long voice, which made Tang Shiqi laugh. He picked up the air conditioner remote control at hand and turned it on.

Tang Shiqi complained, " Who told you to always talk nonsense to me? "

He looked at the proud and arrogant Teacher Tang and felt itchy in his heart. He sat up, opened the quilt, and rolled Teacher Tang, who was standing beside the bed, into the quilt.

He hugged Teacher Tang's waist and fell backwards, and Teacher Tang fell on the bed with him due to his force.

The quilt was filled with his heat and his body was covered in sweat, just like the warmth he had just shown.

Teacher Tang thought he was just making a fuss and smiled, " Your quilt is like a sauna, let me out quickly. "

The next second, Chi Lie tightened his embrace and turned over to change his position. He moved upwards so that he and Teacher Tang were face to face, chest to chest.

He saw that Teacher Tang's smile froze on his face, the beating in his chest suddenly became violent, and a light red gradually climbed from the back of his neck to behind his ears.

He felt that in this position, it would be particularly beautiful when Teacher Tang pushed him to resist, which coincided with the sweaty look in his dream.

But Teacher Tang did not give him the chance to make his dream come true. She just turned her head away and didn't look at him, with her hands softly placed on his shoulders.

The voice was also soft, " Don't be like this. "

" What? " His breathing became heavy, burning Teacher Tang's neck even redder, and he asked: " Was it like this last night? I don't remember, Teacher Tang, please help me recall it. "

Teacher Tang pursed his lips and didn't say anything, or as if there was something he was unable to say.

He was not in a hurry and waited, but his eyes were tracing every inch of Teacher Tang's exposed skin.

It turned out that Teacher Tang had a small mole on the side of her ear, which was very inconspicuous. He had to get so close to her to discover it. He also remembered that Teacher Tang also had two small red moles on her lower back.

His hand moved unconsciously, and he found the location of the small mole on the lower back based on his memory. His fingers rubbed Teacher Tang's back in circles. Teacher Tang still didn't dodge, but just shrank her shoulders and blushed, like a delicate doll that could be manipulated by anyone.

Next was the neck. There was a shallow neck wrinkle on Teacher Tang's neck, which he thought was very good. It added a bit of reality to Teacher Tang's beauty and allowed him to see and touch it.

Although Mr. Tang still failed to reunite with the tearful eyes in his dream, his current appearance was enough to give him some new dreams at night.

In his heart, Teacher Tang doesn't like men, doesn't like him, and of course doesn't want to be overly intimate with him, so he always forces her in his dreams, and only in his dreams does he force her.

Teacher Tang now has an attitude of shy acceptance.

But no matter what he thought or dreamed, after waking up, he would not do anything. He would not do anything that Teacher Tang disagreed with.

He let out a long sigh, leaned close to Teacher Tang's ear, and tentatively said, "I want to kiss you."

He felt that Teacher Tang's breathing was disordered, "No ..."

He was unwilling to give in. "No need to kiss, can you kiss here? Just think of it as an accident."

He placed his hand on the side of Teacher Tang's neck and stroked her Adam's apple with his thumb. He was afraid that Teacher Tang would feel uncomfortable, so he only dared to do it gently.

The touch of his fingertips told him that Teacher Tang had swallowed his saliva, and after his Adam's apple slid, he whispered, "You kissed me yesterday."

His brain was blank for a moment.

What happened last night that made Teacher Tang so obedient today and even ... kissed me? He was afraid that he was not in a clear mind and had done something stupid. He panicked for a moment and looked into Teacher Tang's eyes and asked, "What else did I do? Or what did I say? Did I make you angry?"

Who would have thought that Teacher Tang turned her eyes back to stare to the side, still with her head tilted and her eyelashes drooping.

Tang Shiqi: "Even if you kiss me, I won't be angry."

After he finished speaking, Chi Lie tightened his arms and took a deep breath. He intuitively felt that some of his organs were not functioning properly. His overflowing desire blocked his breathing, and he had to vent it on Teacher Tang.

Right away, immediately.

The author has something to say:
Can you leave a comment?
I wonder if anyone is willing to subscribe (crying)

Chapter 41 His Skirt

41

Teacher Tang said they kissed last night.

Teacher Tang said that he kissed him and he was not angry.

Doesn't that mean you can kiss me?

He moved his palm, held Teacher Tang's neck, took several deep breaths, and then he mustered up the courage to gently kiss Teacher Tang's Adam's apple.

The hand on his shoulder clenched instantly, pulling his shirt collar askew. He kissed him a little harder and Teacher Tang hummed softly.

His other free hand also clenched Teacher Tang's shirt, his teeth clenched tightly, "Teacher Tang, are you really a straight man? Do you make this kind of sound when you have sex with your girlfriend? "

He thought that Teacher Tang would call him a hooligan and blame him for being offensive, but unexpectedly, Teacher Tang was completely mature, carefully rubbing the fabric at his collar, "We haven't done it before ... He doesn't like it. "

Chi Lie thought that woman was blind. How could anyone not like having sex with Teacher Tang? She was so ungrateful.

He tightened his embrace again and lifted Teacher Tang's right leg under the quilt. "I like it. Do you want to try it with me? "

Teacher Tang finally didn't want to play along with him anymore. "You're doing this again. Let me up now. It's so hot. "

Contentment is the key to happiness. He felt that he had eaten enough today. He got off Teacher Tang, grabbed the front of his clothes and shook it, feeling that his body was covered with sweat.

He got up from the bed and said, "I'm going to take a shower. "

Teacher Tang was still in shock, but she still grabbed his sleeve and said, "Don't go. What if you get a fever if you wash again? "

His eyes lit up, and he suddenly felt that having a fever was actually a wonderful thing. He evaded the question, "No, I'm fine now. "

Teacher Tang looked at him suspiciously, "Why do I feel like you like having a fever? "

Chi Lie never minds revealing some of his little thoughts to Tang Shiqi.

He sat on the edge of the bed and looked back at Teacher Tang who was kneeling on the bed.

His pajamas were rubbed askew by him, revealing half of his collarbone and a bit of his chest.

It has been hot these past few months, and Teacher Tang doesn't wear pajamas anymore, only a pair of wide shorts that don't even reach her knees.

The trouser legs were too wide, and the extra space tempted people to reach in. He was also drawn in, turning half of his body back, his fingertips itching, and he wanted to reach in and touch.

In the end, I only dared to pinch the edge of Teacher Tang's trouser leg to help him smooth out the wrinkles and cover him up.

He leaned against Teacher Tang, " When I had a fever, you let me kiss you, hold you, feed me porridge, touch my face, and speak softly than usual. "

Tang Shiqi became anxious. He had noticed this when he was caught in the rain during the monthly exam. Chi Lie liked to get what he wanted by hurting himself.

Be it forgiveness or love.

These behaviors, coupled with his general understanding of Chi Lie's family situation, made him know what Chi Lie was missing.

Love, attention, respect.

He suddenly felt a little worried, so he let Chi Lie go after a month. He wanted to " cure " Chi Lie

He twirled his fingertips, overcame his worries , raised his hand and touched Chi Lie's face, " It doesn't matter if you have a fever. "

He wanted to tell Chi Lie, don't use self-harm to gain sympathy, and stop deceiving yourself and others into thinking it is love.

You deserve to be loved. As long as you find the right person, there is no need to be so humble. But these words were hypocritical and corny, he couldn't say them out loud and could only express them through his actions.

Although he was not the right person, before that person appeared, during the one month summer vacation, he wanted to make Chi Lie understand this matter.

He just touched Chi Lie's cheek, and Chi Lie looked flattered, which made him feel sad.

He slid his hand from his cheek to his neck, and encouraged himself secretly in his heart.

It was clearly he who agreed to hold hands and hug, but Chi Lie always had to take the initiative to ask for it, and even had to pay a price to ask for it. What kind of promise was this?

He went forward and hugged Chi Lie's neck, giving him a hug. " Why don't you wait until night? If you don't have a fever again, you can take a shower at night. "

Tang Shiqi was simple. He didn't know how much damage he could do to Chi Lie. Chi Lie was alone and his heart was beating so fast that it was about to jump out.

Chi Lie listened and worked hard. He simply took some cold medicine and no longer felt uncomfortable in the evening. He followed Teacher Tang to the dance class.

A few days later, Teacher Tang was invited to perform in S City. After communicating with the parents in the class, he decided to take some of the children who wanted to go to participate in the performance.

The costumes arrived during the day, but Teacher Tang was worried about Chi Lie and didn't have time to pack. She went there after dinner, and Chi Lie followed her.

There were a lot of accessories and props. Chi Lie helped Teacher Tang to organize them and matched each set of clothes and props according to the diagrams.

As he was rummaging through the documents, he pulled out a performance costume that was obviously the wrong weight. He guessed it was Tang Shiqi's and immediately wanted to take it out for a look.

He opened the package with gentle movements, as if Teacher Tang's clothes were as precious as he was, and he did not dare to touch it with force.

Judging from the general shape, it was a skirt. He stood up and shook it off, but it seemed wrong no matter how he looked at it.

"skirts" in dance performances, the waist and shoulders of this skirt are obviously a women's style.

Teacher Tang also noticed the situation here and saw something was wrong at a glance, "The merchant sent my item to the wrong address. I need to contact them earlier."

He immediately picked up his phone to communicate, and said to Chi Lie: "Let's fold this and put it aside."

He heard what Teacher Tang said, but he couldn't put down the skirt in his hands. Although the skirt had narrow waist and shoulders, it was very elastic and had a high slit to the thigh, so he should wear a pair of panties underneath.

But none of this matters. What matters is that he thinks Teacher Tang can fit in.

So when Teacher Tang came out after finishing the call, he was still holding the skirt and daydreaming, and he even had an image of Teacher Tang wearing the skirt in his mind.

Seeing Teacher Tang coming over, he asked anxiously: "Teacher Tang, do you want to return this?"

Teacher Tang is always considerate. "Do you want to give it to a female classmate? Then I won't return it. You can take it."

Chi Lie was speechless. He was gay, so where could he send his female classmates? Did Teacher Tang ever take his sexual orientation seriously?

Then Teacher Tang also reacted, smiled apologetically, reached out and pulled the performance costume, "Boys can wear it too."

Chi Lie was a little unhappy. She was blushing and enduring in his arms during the day, but why did she push him away so easily at night?

He approached Teacher Tang and compared the clothes to Teacher Tang. "Well, can a male teacher wear them?"

The author has something to say:

I have a lucky draw on Weibo

20/15/10r, if you are interested, you can go and have a look

Chapter 42 He Called a Wild Man

42

"Well, can male teachers wear it?"

Teacher Tang immediately retracted her fingers that were holding onto the clothes, her eyelids trembling uncontrollably, "Male teachers ... can't wear this."

Chi Lie also felt that the time was not right, so he took back his clothes and put them on his arm, " Then can the male teacher kiss me? If you kiss me, I won't have to wear it. "

He has a good memory, and the memories of when he was three or four years old are still retained. He was very cute when he was a child, and when the elders came, they loved to pinch his face or kiss him on the cheek.

At that time, he didn't know how to resist or express himself, he just knew that he hated kissing. When he was " secretly in love " with the former captain, he never had the urge to kiss him. He even felt sick of kissing scenes when watching them on TV.

But after meeting Teacher Tang, everything changed.

He wanted to kiss Teacher Tang's eyebrows, eyes, nose tip, mouth, chin, and even neck, chest, lower abdomen, thighs, and Teacher Tang's beautiful feet and hands.

He also wanted to be kissed by Teacher Tang, anywhere.

Kissing suddenly stopped being annoying and became romantic, beautiful, and full of love.

He pulled Teacher Tang's wrist and asked, " Can a male teacher kiss me? "

Kissing had never been part of their agreement, but after last night's fever, that part of the shackles had been broken, and Teacher Tang had the same idea as him, rubbing her fingertips together to weigh the pros and cons.

He counted down in his mind. If Teacher Tang still didn't have an answer after thirty seconds, he would let the matter go. After all, there was still a lot of time left, and he was reluctant to force Teacher Tang into anything.

At the 28th second, Teacher Tang felt sorry for him and bargained with him, " Well, can we not kiss? "

Okay, of course. He never thought that Teacher Tang would kiss him on the mouth. He thought Teacher Tang was struggling over whether to kiss him or not, but in fact, he was struggling over where to kiss him.

Sure enough, kissing was added to their memory making.

He suddenly had a luxury hope. He hoped that in the future, Teacher Tang would worry about how long and where to kiss.

At this stage, he is very satisfied, with an irrepressible light in his eyes. " Of course, I would also like Teacher Tang to kiss my hair. "

Teacher Tang approached him with red ears. He thought that the honor should have been given to his chin or cheek, or at least his forehead.

Unexpectedly, Teacher Tang was a little lazy and was unwilling to stand on tiptoe or stretch out his hand to press his head. He just raised his face and tilted his head slightly.

Two thin lips gently fell on his Adam's apple.

He felt himself suffocating for a moment.

I wonder if Teacher Tang is aware of the privacy of her Adam's apple. No wonder she accepts it so easily during the day and flirts so casually at night.

Although she is a few years older than him, her mind is so pure that he always has the illusion that she is leading a child astray.

Chi Lie still kept the performance dress. He folded it neatly and put it in a packaging bag, already planning various uses for it.

At around ten o'clock, they returned home. Jiang Zhi was playing games with his classmates via microphone in the living room. He had long been accustomed to seeing them go out together. They acted like they had lived together for years. Their waking up and going to bed times were the same, and their bathing, meals, and washing dishes were all arranged perfectly. After everything was ready, the two of them lay down on the bed to rest, and then Teacher Tang's phone rang.

This period of time was the usual time for Teacher Tang's mother to call. Teacher Tang picked up the phone and called out "Mom", and then said sorry, why is it you?

The tone did not sound happy.

He instinctively felt that there was something going on, but he was too rude to do something as wicked as eavesdropping on Teacher Tang's phone calls. He waited, tossing and turning, for about forty minutes, which was ten minutes longer than his usual phone calls with his mother, before Teacher Tang came back.

His tone was flat. "Who did you talk to on the phone for so long?"

Teacher Tang seemed absent-minded. I couldn't tell his emotions. He just answered mechanically, "Old friends. I haven't seen them for a long time, so we talked a lot."

Chi Lie didn't know where his intuition came from, and asked: "Is it the doctor friend you mentioned?"

Teacher Tang sat down beside the bed, still in a state of dismay, "Yes."

Too few words. The answer Teacher Tang gave him was too short. He didn't like the feeling of being ignored, so he stood up, snatched the phone from Teacher Tang's hand and threw it on the bed.

He crawled on his knees to get behind Teacher Tang, spread his legs, and locked Teacher Tang in his arms from behind, resting his chin on her shoulder.

Teacher Tang was startled by the sudden intimacy. She shuddered and looked back, "What's wrong?"

He approached, pressed his forehead against Teacher Tang's, and spoke before anyone could dodge, "Is the doctor a man or a woman?"

Tang Shiqi answered truthfully: "Male, male."

Fortunately, it wasn't the ex. Chi Lie was relieved, but he didn't let her off. "Oh, you were talking on the phone with another man for a long time, and you were absent-minded when you came back. Your man is still waiting for you in bed, can't you see it?"

This put Teacher Tang in a big trap again. Teacher Tang tried his best to dodge Chi Lie's approach, but no matter how he dodged, he was only in Chi Lie's arms.

Teacher Tang was so disappointed, "Don't always talk like this, it's so unclear, as if I'm cheating on you."

Chi Lie was able to wrap his hand around Teacher Tang's waist and hold her tightly. He used his free hand to tap the tip of Teacher Tang's nose, "You haven't actually cheated yet, but you have already shown signs of cheating, do you know that?"

Mr. Tang's breathing became panic. He had been a model good boy all his life and hated infidelity the most. "I was just making a phone call. I didn't mean to cheat."

Then he realized that he and Chi Lie were not in a relationship at all, so there was no such thing as cheating.

Looking at Chi Lie who was shaking with laughter on his shoulder, he rolled his eyes slightly, "You are scaring me again, so annoying. "

Seeing Teacher Tang in a bad mood, Chi Lie suddenly felt emotional.

At first, Teacher Tang was a gentle "adult" who properly handled work, life, and the academic problems of his two troublesome younger brothers.

He always smiles gently, is polite to everyone, and is calm about everything.

But now Teacher Tang was sitting in his arms, frowning like a little child. Beneath his seemingly smart and respectable appearance, he had a heart that was pure to death.

She unconsciously exposed the alluring parts of her body, gave him kisses and hugs casually, praised him generously, agreed to outrageous promises easily, and did not set up any privacy defense for him.

He buried his head in Teacher Tang's neck, quietly releasing the love that had accumulated in his nameless container. He just needed to be quiet for a while.

But Teacher Tang refused to let him go, so she calmed down and turned back, her hair tangled with his.

Teacher Tang asked him, "Chi Lie, can you accompany me to S City? "

He kept his posture unchanged, occasionally kissing Teacher Tang's shoulder while talking, "Why do you want me to accompany you? "

Teacher Tang felt that he was asking Chi Lie for help, but he didn't know that Chi Lie was eager to go with him.

He secretly rubbed the top of Chi Lie's head, trying to please him, "That doctor is also in S City. I had some conflicts with him, but he insisted on seeing me. I feel safe with you around. "

A sense of security is something that even lovers lack.

Chi Lie asked, "But I am younger than you, why can I give you a sense of security? "

Tang Shiqi was completely oblivious to her straightforward words and poked Chi Lie's belly with her backhand, "Ah, maybe ... your abdominal muscles are better than his? "

Chi Lie's alarm bells immediately went off. He was happy when someone praised his abdominal muscles, but, "Have you also seen his abdominal muscles?! "

The author has something to say:

I'm going to take two days off tomorrow and the day after tomorrow. There are so many readers all of a sudden, and I'm a little panicked. I'll sort out my manuscripts.
but!!

There will be an update on Thursday (two chapters), so there is no need to stockpile, just read it. From now on, there will be at least daily updates, and the full text will not be long.

It's the first time to wear a skirt, but wait.

Thank you for reading.

" Have you seen his abs too?! "

Teacher Tang didn't know whether to laugh or cry. " What are you thinking? We have swum together before. "

Chi Lie was not willing to give in and insisted on comparing, " Have you also seen his private parts? "

The small soup dumplings that had just come out of the steamer were identified as undercooked and were put back into the steamer by Chef Chi to be re-steamed.

Tang Shiqi: " You are always imagining something. No, there is nothing else. "

" Okay. " Chi Lie was completely relieved and finally let go of Teacher Tang. " I forgive you. You can turn off the lights and go to bed. "

Tang Shiqi smiled and said, " Childish. "

They each lay down in their respective places, but because they had switched positions last night, they were now covered with each other's blankets.

Chi Lie would look at his phone for a while before going to bed. Today was no exception. As soon as he unlocked his phone, he found that Jiang Zhi had sent him several messages. When he opened them, he found that they were the live-action version of the comic book by Jiang Zhi. He quickly changed his position and lay on his side, avoiding Teacher Tang's sight, and saw the last message from Jiang Zhifa:

[You and my brother are like this too?! Is this how all you gays communicate?!]

[No! You are not allowed to bully my brother like this!]

He didn't reply. Although he was not qualified to bully Tang Shiqi now, he felt that he should be able to match Jiang Zhifa's every video in the future.

A dangerous idea suddenly popped into his mind.

His way of dealing with Teacher Tang has always been to press for more. So if he expands Teacher Tang's acceptance range, can he press for more?

So he edited the short video into a gay art film overnight, and the artistic depth was edited into a restricted scale by him.

The next morning, he immediately suggested to Teacher Tang, who had just opened her eyes, " Teacher Tang, I see there is a projector on your desk. Let's use it to watch a movie tonight. "

This was a very simple request, and Tang Shiqi had no reason to disagree. He was still groggy in the morning, so he nodded and went back to sleep for a nap.

It was not until nine o'clock in the morning that the three brothers finished packing and went to Tang Shiqi's dance class to help.

The use of prospective college students, of course, is to stay at home and help out.

Jiang Zhi felt too hot and refused to stay even a second after getting out of the car. He went straight to the second floor to enjoy the air conditioning. Chi Lie waited for Tang Shiqi to park the car and helped him carry his bag and cell phone.

As soon as you enter the door, you will see the pink jewelry store. It is summer vacation, so there are more customers. Groups of little girls are trying on jewelry in front of the mirror.

Chi Lie didn't care about these things. He was only concerned about things related to Teacher Tang. However, a girl trotted over and stood in front of Tang Shiqi.

" Teacher Xiao Tang! Which of these two phone cases looks better? "

Teacher Tang looked at it carefully and said, " I like the one on the right. "

The girl also looked at it again and said, " Then I'll listen to Teacher Xiao Tang. It's 12.9 yuan . I 'll send it to you on WeChat directly! "

The girl ran away happily and ran towards her companions.

But Chi Lie blinked twice and asked in shock: " You opened this store? "

When he first saw this store, he thought it should be opened by a little girl, but thinking about it today, this kind of store is indeed more in line with Teacher Tang's image.

It is a clean dream that is out of place in the small county town. It is the only clean place among the dirty and narrow streets.

Like Teacher Tang himself, he was the person he fell in love with at first sight in the small county town, a dusty pearl, a diamond, and a smooth jade.

Teacher Tang was a little embarrassed. " I'm sorry I didn't tell you at the beginning. I was afraid you wouldn't be able to accept it. "

" What? " he blurted out. After all, it was just a jewelry store. What was there to be unacceptable?

Teacher Tang lowered her head and said, " My previous girlfriend thought it was weird for boys to like pink, so she wouldn't let me use anything pink. "

When people are in love, they are blind. He thought at the time that it was just a color choice, so what was there that could not be accommodated?

But after he broke up with the relationship, he realized that if his partner was unwilling to give in on such a small issue as color, then what was the need for a " partner " ?

He expressed his resistance silently. After the breakup, he opened this store, expressing his preferences unscrupulously and not caring about the occasional strange discussions in the small county town.

But inexplicably, after seeing Chi Lie, he became timid again.

Chi Lie picked up a bracelet nearby. The pink beads were crystal clear and seemed to be glowing under the lights of the jewelry store.

Then he took Teacher Tang's hand and put the bracelet on her. " It's really beautiful. " I couldn't tell whether he was talking about the person or the bracelet.

Teacher Tang suddenly came out of her uneasy state. The light in her eyes was more beautiful than the bracelet. She smiled lightly, picked up a pink metal brooch, and wanted to pin it on Chi Lie's chest.

Lin paused again and said apologetically: " Forget it, this dress seems to leave pinholes. " Then he was about to put it back.

Chi Lie grabbed the shrinking wrist and said, " Put it on me. Just don't take it off. I think it looks good with it on. "

Teacher Tang became happy again. She pulled up his clothes on his chest and carefully put on the brooch, a small pink heart surrounded by stars.

There were many people in the store. He resisted the urge to kiss Teacher Tang's eyes, took a deep breath, put his hand on her shoulder, and said, " Let's go upstairs. "

He didn't know what Teacher Tang had experienced because of pink, but he just felt that Teacher Tang's footsteps were much lighter than usual.

When passing the stairs, he noticed the graffiti wall again. At that time, he thought it was drawn by a child, but now he has a new guess.

He stopped, leaned on the handrail of the stairs, looked up at the graffiti on the wall, and called Teacher Tang, " Teacher Tang, did you draw that on the wall? "

Tang Shiqi paused, touched his nose and nodded. For some reason, his desire to share with Chi Lie became stronger.

Perhaps it was because Chi Lie accepted his pinkness, he felt that Chi Lie could accept more from him. He had not yet cured Chi Lie, but Chi Lie had already cured him.

Chi Lie looked at every pattern from beginning to end. Some were cute candies and accessories, some were realistic stages and dancers, and most were shapeless scribbles, some were even black, as a vent.

He had good eyesight and immediately found the three abbreviations hidden in the most remote corner: LDC . The three letters were written roughly, circled in red, and finally marked with a big cross.

His intuition was very sharp, " Is this the name of your ex? "

Tang Shiqi didn't want to lie to Chi Lie anymore, but this matter had to be concealed. " No, it was a conflict with a friend. For a while, I couldn't let it go. I hated him so much that I did a lot of stupid things. "

Combining what he heard before, Chi Lie asked: " That doctor? "

Teacher Tang agreed.

Although his opinion was rejected in red, Chi Lie still felt uncomfortable. Why could this person's name be left on Tang Shiqi's wall and be passed by every day?

" Please paint it over. " Chi Lie went down a step and came face to face with Teacher Tang, but he was shorter and looked even more pitiful.

He squeezed Teacher Tang as he took her hand. " Is there any spray paint left? I want you to paint it off. "

Tang Shiqi was thinking about where he put the remaining spray paint, but Chi Lie thought he was hesitating and put his arms around Teacher Tang's waist.

He tilted his face up, close enough to kiss, " Why don't you kiss me? If you kiss me I won't let you erase it. "

He once again gave Teacher Tang a choice.

In fact, for Teacher Tang, none of the options are necessary, but when the options are presented, people will subconsciously choose one of the two.

But only children make choices, while adults want them all. Teacher Tang has already decided to cure Chi Lie, so kisses and hugs are not something that can be exchanged for chips, or a compromise of choosing one over the other.

He held Chi Lie's face in his hands, " The spray paint is in the storage room on the second floor. I'll paint it over and kiss you. "

The author has something to say:

Fixed bug

Chi Lie currently doesn't know, ldc is the ex

Chapter 44 Confess to Him

44

Teacher Tang's words exploded in Chi Lie's ears. He watched Teacher Tang lower her head little by little, press her soft red lips on his forehead, and suddenly hugged him tighter. He buried his face in Teacher Tang's neck and sniffed deeply. Teacher Tang shrugged shyly in his arms, but still tilted her neck to obey his actions.

A shadow suddenly fell on the second floor staircase. Jiang Zhi's mouth shape was exaggerated, but he dared to speak in a whisper, "What are you doing? There are people downstairs when you turn the corner. You have no shame!"

Teacher Tang began to refuse, and Chi Lie had no choice but to let go and followed Teacher Tang upstairs.

The elementary school had not yet had its summer vacation, so the children would only come after school in the afternoon. Chi Lie and Jiang Zhi cleaned the room so that Teacher Tang could warm up and stretch her legs in peace.

But although Teacher Tang was relieved, Chi Lie was not at peace at all.

While wiping the mirror in the dance studio, he couldn't stop peeking at Teacher Tang's body in the mirror.

Teacher Tang took off her shoes and socks, and stretched her legs on the handrail by the window, just like she did when he first met Teacher Tang.

Compared to the first time they met, he understood many things about Teacher Tang better. He had held her ankles and calves, kissed her slender neck, buried his head in her soft breasts, hugged her narrow waist, and even her round buttocks had fallen into his arms.

He does not know how to be content. He feels that Teacher Tang's body is a map of a level game. The more levels he lights up, the stronger his confidence becomes and the stronger his desire to pass the levels becomes.

What's left? Somewhere more private, deeper.

He took full charge of the mirror-cleaning job, while Jiang Zhi was happy to have some free time, cleaning the lockers on the side.

"appreciate" Teacher Tang's body unscrupulously.

In fact, he knew that Teacher Tang did nothing but was just doing the basic skills that were very common for a dancer. However, he was lustful and only lustful towards Teacher Tang.

He thought of the dress from last night again. The dress passed through his imagination and through the mirror to Teacher Tang.

Teacher Tang is controlling her legs, with her toes stretched and lifted upwards. Her two legs are in a straight line, but in the middle there is a round M shape.

Chi Lie closed his eyes and hallucinations appeared in his mind.

The dance skirt of her performance costume tightly wrapped around Teacher Tang's waist.

Teacher Tang raised her toes and stretched her left leg out from the slit. The muscles in her thigh were taut and the lines were extremely beautiful.

He would stroke through the slit, destroying the skirt, leaving only a little bit hanging precariously on Teacher Tang.

Last night's skirt, last night's video, they merged in Chi Lie's chaotic mind and projected onto Teacher Tang.

Teacher Tang was unaware of this and just looked at the birds perching on the tall trees outside the window, trying to find some fun in his boring basic skills.

Chi Lie faced the mirror, his mouth dry and his emotions surging.

He knew that if he continued watching, something bad would happen, but he couldn't help himself. It wasn't until Teacher Tang maintained the posture of controlling his legs and reached out to hammer the inner thigh muscles that he could no longer bear it.

He dropped the rag in his hand, turned around, and walked straight towards Teacher Tang.

As if she had sensed his footsteps, Teacher Tang turned around, completely unaware of the approaching danger, her eyes clear and innocent.

"What ..." Teacher Tang was speechless after saying only two words because of his gaze. He paused for a second.

The weather is not too hot today, so I just opened the window. The breeze blew up the gauze curtains into waves, and the sunlight was filtered and became gentle. These formed the scene behind Teacher Tang. Teacher Tang's world was a glowing warm white.

And he came to invade with a burning desire.

Teacher Tang obviously saw that he had no serious thoughts and wanted to put his legs down and close them.

He immediately stopped the pause of one second, pressed against Teacher Tang's back, and took Teacher Tang's half-raised left leg into his arms.

Chi Liegao, if he fished it out like this, Teacher Tang would have to stand on tiptoe. "Don't make a fuss here, Jiang Zhi is still here."

"He went downstairs to throw dirty water." He held Teacher Tang's legs with one hand and Teacher Tang's waist with the other hand, and leaned his cheek on Teacher Tang's shoulder with a satisfied look.

Teacher Tang begged for mercy, "How long can I keep splashing water? My legs are cramping. Let me down now."

He refused, but suggested, "Then I'll hold both of your legs up."

Tang Shiqi was speechless, and in revenge, she knocked her head against Chi Lie's, "Stop it, I can't stand it anymore."

"Teacher Tang." He brought up a completely unrelated topic, "When we watch a movie tonight, you must watch it from the beginning to the end with me, okay?"

There were footsteps on the stairs. Let alone just watching a movie, even if Teacher Tang agreed to make a movie, he would agree.

"Okay, okay, Xiaozhi is here, you put him down first."

A second before Jiang Zhi stepped in, Chi Lie put Teacher Tang down and stroked the side of Teacher Tang's leg vaguely. He turned around as if nothing had happened, picked up the rag again, and started scrubbing inch by inch.

Teacher Tang in the mirror, however, took a long break with her back to him. When she raised her legs again, she secretly looked back at him. Their eyes suddenly met in the mirror, which

irritated Teacher Tang so much that she quickly put down her legs and ran out on the pretext of going to the toilet.

Around three o'clock in the afternoon, the two younger brothers finally helped Teacher Tang finish the general cleaning. Jiang Zhi seemed liberated. He turned around and went to the square at the back. His classmates had asked him to play basketball.

Chi Lie could not participate in this kind of interaction between classmates. Whether it was his own idea or he was just following the trend, high school boys could not tolerate homosexuality. Cold looks and gossip are all good. If Chi Lie didn't look like someone who is not easy to bully, he would have been beaten with fists and feet.

So Chi Lie had no choice but to continue staying in the dance class to accompany Tang Shiqi. But he was very willing to do so. Although he had only attended school for one year longer than his "classmates", he always felt that those people were childish and bad. He preferred to stretch his legs for Teacher Tang rather than playing basketball with a group of classmates who only knew how to brag and talk nonsense all day long.

That's right, he insisted on helping Teacher Tang stretch her legs, even though Teacher Tang didn't need it at all and even though his movements had nothing to do with his major.

He "instructed" Teacher Tang to do the splits and lean forward like he did at home that day, while he knelt down and stood behind him, pressing half of his body down.

Teacher Tang was surprised, "You don't have to press it all down, just press it for me with your hands."

He put the tip of his nose against the back of Teacher Tang's neck and said bluntly, "Do you really think I want to help you stretch your legs?"

So his nose tip sensed Teacher Tang's temperature, rising little by little. Now without Jiang Zhi and students, he really wanted to show those videos to Teacher Tang.

He no longer supported himself on the ground with his hands, but instead wrapped his arms around Teacher Tang's waist, pressing his entire weight down so that Teacher Tang's entire upper body was almost touching the ground.

He expressed his love without reservation, "Teacher Tang, I love hugging you." He could hug Teacher Tang completely, as if Teacher Tang belonged to him completely.

They were too close, and Chi Lie's thoughts were all reflected in his body. Tang Shiqi was in a panic, but the more she struggled, the more obvious she felt it.

He buried his face in his hands and complained: "How come you don't know how to be shy?"

Chi Lie moved unconsciously, "I like you, every part of you. There's nothing to be shy about. It's not shameful to like you."

Tang Shiqi was speechless. He had wasted too much time on his first love. Only after the breakup did he realize that the relationship was not equal and healthy, and he did not get the love he deserved.

So much so that when facing Chi Lie, or the next possible relationship in the future, he is still like the student who was just beginning to fall in love.

He was like facing love for the first time, unable to distinguish the boundaries between friends and partners, and was too shy to say words like "love" and "like". However, when he saw the undisguised desire in Chi Lie's eyes, he never felt offended.

He just felt that he had no virtue or ability.

Seeing that he was silent, Chi Lie loosened his restraints and asked carefully, " Teacher Tang, are you angry? Can't you accept this level now? "

Tang Shiqi shook his head in silence, his voice muffled in his palms, " Don't be angry, I promised you that I can hug you. "

Chi Lie couldn't help laughing, " Teacher Tang, even after all this, does it count as a hug? "

Tang Shiqi's whole body became hot. " Why did you have to say it out loud? You, you ... scoundrell! "

Chi Lie lay on Teacher Tang, trying to hold back his laughter, his chest was shaking. He was holding the person he loved in his arms, with the breeze and the warm sun beside his ears. Perhaps it was because the atmosphere was too suitable, he suddenly couldn't hold back his temper.

" Teacher Tang, we haven't been together for a month. Can we really start a relationship? "

Teacher Tang's body stiffened for a moment, and the ringing of the phone interrupted the conversation.

Chi Lie frowned and stood up to see who was so tactless. He saw the words " Doctor Liu " on Teacher Tang's mobile phone screen .

The author has something to say:

Come on

I promise, there will be a chapter at 9am next time.

You can come and see it in the morning ~

Chapter 45 His Rejection (bug fix , please clear cache)

45

Chi Lie handed the phone to Tang Shiqi. Tang Shiqi raised her upper body, lowered her head and rubbed her thighs. She didn't answer the phone and muttered, " It's pressing so hard that I can't even close my legs. "

Chi Lie almost crushed his phone. Was it that his mind was too dirty, or was it that Teacher Tang's mind was too innocent? Why were just a few words from Teacher Tang enough to make his heart, which had just calmed down, hot again?

He didn't dare to say anything more and continued to hand over the phone, " Answer it. "

Tang Shiqi didn't answer. " Is it about Doctor Liu? Hang up. I hate him. "

Chi Lie suddenly thought of the abbreviation with a big red cross. Tang Shiqi has a good temper and rarely hates anything or anyone.

He obeyed and hung up the phone with a swipe of his thumb. " Is this the LDC hanging on the wall ? "

Teacher Tang nodded.

Chi Lie began to feel uncomfortable again. Why could this person leave such a deep impression on Teacher Tang, and such strong feelings, even if it was disgust.

He pretended not to care and sat down next to Teacher Tang, his eyes fixed on the thigh flesh that had been squeezed and kneaded.

Chi Lie: " Why are you guys fighting? I want to hear it. "

But Teacher Tang seemed reluctant to say anything and simply said, " He lied to me. "

Seeing that Teacher Tang was obviously in a low mood, no matter how curious he was, he didn't have the heart to ask any more questions.

I put my arm around Teacher Tang's shoulders and squeezed him. " Where's the spray paint? I'll get it. We'll cover it up completely. "

Teacher Tang laughed immediately, " Are you treating me like a kid? "

But he did want to cover up the name. If Chi Lie hadn't seen it today, he would have forgotten that there was such an abbreviation on the graffiti wall.

Now that I know, I feel uncomfortable. " It's in the metal cabinet in the storage room. I forgot which layer it is. Please go and look for it. "

Chi Lie stood up with his hands on the ground, and as if his position had been reversed, he rubbed the top of Tang Shiqi's hair, " Thank you, little one, for letting me comfort you. "

Each of them took two bottles of spray paint, and just when Chi Lie wanted to cover it with black, he was stopped by Teacher Tang.

He was a little unhappy, " Can't bear to part with it? "

Teacher Tang laughed at him, " What? The black mass is too ugly. Use pink and repaint it. " It's not just covering it up, it's letting it go and letting new buds grow.

He covered it perfectly with pink, which matched the main color of the store. He didn't feel like venting anything, but just felt calm. The mood that had been disturbed by Liu Dingcheng in the past two days was now completely dissipated.

Unexpectedly, as a " little kid ", he was really coaxed by Chi Lie's method.

Chi Lie drew a red heart on the side and circled it with a black and white border to give Teacher Tang space to resolve the problem himself.

But he was still not magnanimous enough to completely ignore it. The one who covered up the traces of others should be, and could only be, him.

He picked up a small can of spray paint and was eager to try, " Teacher Tang, I want to paint with you. "

Teacher Tang was as easy to talk to as ever and stepped back to make room.

As a result, Chi Lie sprayed " CL love TSQ " on the pink . It's old-fashioned, childish, and unoriginal, but it can make people feel the unusually straightforward love.

The enthusiasm and sincerity that belong to young people.

Chi Lie grumbled as he spit, " If he can occupy a place, I want one too. Why should you remember him for so many years, and I have to disappear in a month? I don't want it. "

He continued: " Anyway, I want to keep this graffiti longer than LDC did, even if it's just one second longer. "

Tang Shiqi didn't know whether to laugh or cry. In Chi Lie's opinion, Liu Dingcheng should be just an ordinary friend who had a falling out with him, but he could be so jealous .

Just when I was about to make a few jokes, I heard Chi Lie say, " You haven't answered my question just now. Can we really be in love? "

Teacher Tang was unusually anxious and immediately replied, " We agreed on one month. "

In fact, Tang Shiqi didn't really understand himself now. He didn't know if he would miss it in a month, and he wasn't sure if Chi Lie was just in a whim.

When a young man says he likes someone, he really means it at that moment. He can try to believe it, but how long this love will last is a huge variable.

Moreover, he himself didn't understand what he really felt towards Chi Lie. Even if he had impure thoughts about him, was Chi Lie worth him taking that step again?

Therefore, at this stage, all he can do is "create memories". As for other things, he himself cannot guarantee them and will not give people unnecessary hope.

Fortunately, Chi Lie is used to being boiled like a frog in warm water. If he doesn't agree now, then he won't agree. One day, Teacher Tang will compromise with him.

He also wanted Teacher Tang to like him, but this was not a necessary condition. Even if Teacher Tang had to be with him because of his persistence, coercion and inducement, it didn't matter.

The final result is that we are together.

But at this stage he just wants to pester her, not threaten her.

"Okay, I'll keep my word. One month." He was standing on a step higher than Teacher Tang. The sense of oppression was too strong for him to act pitiful.

I had no choice but to lower my head and stare at the tip of my shoes, looking a little lonely.

But my confession was rejected. Can Teacher Tang comfort me?"

What he actually wanted to say was, Teacher Tang, can you please kiss me?

Whenever he asks for comfort, he asks for a kiss. Will Teacher Tang be trained to develop a conditioned reflex so that he can get a kiss without him saying anything?

Then to a deep kiss.

He wanted to have the right to give Teacher Tang a deep kiss.

Teacher Tang's mouth shape didn't change much when he spoke, but Teacher Tang was shorter than him. When he looked up and talked to him, the tip of his tongue was always faintly visible, which made people greedy.

Don't blame him, blame Teacher Tang. Why can someone's tongue be so seductive?

But he was also afraid that he had pushed Teacher Tang too hard today, so the final way of comforting her should be decided by Teacher Tang.

Slowly, Teacher Tang took his hand, like a gentleman inviting someone to dance, but Teacher Tang did not kiss his thumb. Instead, he placed his soft lips directly on the back of his hand.

Tang Shiqi: "Handsome Mr. Chi, would you like to dance with me?"

He looked at Chi Lie with pleading eyes, "I'll give you a chance to reject me, so we're even, okay?"

But how could he refuse Teacher Tang?

He didn't understand gentlemanly etiquette, and was not satisfied with the simple comfort that was almost equivalent to holding hands. He bent down, picked up Teacher Tang from the next step, and turned to walk upstairs.

After all, they were still on the stairs, and Teacher Tang was scared, so she hugged him tightly.

He walked up steadily, "I won't reject you. You owe me one. It's not fair."

He continued, " But I don't know how to dance. Before I can dance with Teacher Tang, you have to teach me first. "

He liked physical contact with Teacher Tang, and he cleverly thought that if he asked Teacher Tang to teach him to dance as well, he would have more opportunities for contact.

But he didn't expect that the first step in learning dance would be like this.

The author has something to say:

Bug fixed . Like 43 , Chi Lie currently does not know the true identity of LDC.

Chapter 46 His Wavering

46

Teacher Tang told him that Jiang Zhi's mother had asked Jiang Zhi to come and dance to cultivate his character, so there was a piece of Jiang Zhi's training clothes in Tang Shiqi's dressing room.

He really didn't expect that it would be so awkward after he became involved with dancing.

Teacher Tang stared at him in the mirror together. He felt very awkward and Teacher Tang was very distressed.

Due to his nutritional development problems, he had to stretch his skirt to look like Marilyn Monroe.

He didn't understand, " Why do you have wide-leg ones, but Jiang Zhi insisted on buying tight ones? "

Tang Shiqi explained, " He thought this was cool. "

Then he added, " Boys will have this problem more or less when wearing tight clothes, but Xiaozhi didn't have this problem when he wore it ..."

Chi Lie told the truth, " Really? Then I am older than him. "

Teacher Tang looked away, " Don't keep talking nonsense like that. "

Chi Lie turned his head and followed Teacher Tang's eyes, " I didn't say anything nonsense. Didn't you see me? You know whether I said anything nonsense or not. "

Teacher Tang hurriedly turned around to explain, but was caught off guard and her eyes met his. She didn't know whether to hide or not.

His eyes were wandering, and he told the truth, " I have never met Xiao Zhi, so how can I know if you are talking nonsense? "

After hearing this, Chi Lie paused for a moment, then laughed out loud. It would not be an exaggeration to say that he laughed so hard that he bent over.

He really thought that Teacher Tang was too cute, the kind of cuteness that could make people want to destroy her. But every time Teacher Tang looked at him with eyes that were pure , he began to condemn his own bad thoughts.

Teacher Tang was naturally to his liking, and he was naturally unable to do anything with Teacher Tang.

The time of relaxation passed very quickly, and in a blink of an eye it was time for the elementary school students to go home from school. Outside the glass partition, a little fat girl ran up the stairs.

Chi Lie was still wearing tight pants. There was nothing wrong with the pants themselves, but they looked unsightly when he wore them.

He reacted quickly, and before the chubby girl raised her eyes, he dodged and hid behind Tang Shiqi, wrapped his arms around Teacher Tang's waist, fitting tightly, using Teacher Tang's body as a shield.

Yaya didn't know what they were doing and called her uncle enthusiastically. Her cousin also had some free time, so she followed them upstairs. When she looked up, she saw Chi Lie and Teacher Tang in an intimate posture.

Chi Lie and his cousin looked at each other without saying a word, and walked towards the locker room holding Teacher Tang.

The two of them were very close. Chi Lie was afraid of stepping on Teacher Tang, so he walked with his legs slightly apart, which resulted in the two of them getting even closer.

Tang Shiqi always wanted to greet every child and parent, but he was pushed forward by Chi Lie and had no power to resist. In his current state, he was unable to say hello, so he had to let Chi Lie lead him into the locker room.

After Chi Lie entered the room, he still did not let go of Teacher Tang. He pressed Teacher Tang against the door under the pretext of closing the door. "What should I do? Teacher Tang almost embarrassed me."

Teacher Tang wanted to lean back, but his strength was not enough to push Chi Lie away, so he just threw himself into his arms.

He had no choice but to get between Chi Lie and the door. "I'm going out to attend class. What are you doing? Don't be such a scoundrel. Your cousin is still outside."

The fabric of the training suit was thin and close to the skin. Chi Lie felt that they were no different from being honest with each other. There was no air conditioning in the locker room.

Teacher Tang's body temperature gradually rose, and a sweet smell emanated from her body. He thought that in his previous life he was probably a stray dog adopted by Teacher Tang. He was extremely sensitive to the smell of his owner, and was both attached and greedy.

He never thought that his sense of smell was different from that of ordinary people, but he could smell that Teacher Tang smelled good. So he couldn't help but put his nose against Teacher Tang's neck and sniffed deeply.

Teacher Tang and he have a tacit understanding.

Tang Shiqi's love experience is very blank. He had a distant relationship with his ex-girlfriend. After the breakup, he hid in this small county town. Apart from that, he has never had any other love experience. For a 26-year-old man, he is too pure.

Everyone knows how private and ambiguous it is to sniff the neck, and how crossing the line is to be so intimate that it even offends the hug, but he can't tell the difference.

He was tickled by Chi Lie's actions, shrugged and chuckled, "Are you a puppy?"

If Jiang Zhi and Chi Lie said this, then Chi Lie would definitely give them a slap without hesitation, but when Teacher Tang said this to him, he felt it was a compliment and recognition. His hands were already tracing the distance between each of Teacher Tang's ribs, but Teacher Tang was still smiling unconsciously.

He gave a positive answer, " Well, I am a puppy, abandoned by the previous owner. Teacher Tang should be kind and should not abandon a puppy easily after adopting it. "

Tang Shiqi stopped smiling. Chi Lie had clearly said before that he didn't need to feel burdened. He could feel that Chi Lie wanted more and more.

He didn't know whether this was a good thing or a bad thing, he just stated the reality, " The puppy will go to the big city to live a better life. He is just temporarily fostered in my home. When the time is up, he will return to his original owner's home. "

Chi Lie was not satisfied with this answer, he even hated it. He suddenly tightened his already tight embrace even more, and Teacher Tang almost cried out in pain.

He had been very patient before, probably because his cousin was outside, just one door away, which made him feel that Teacher Tang wanted to " send him away " .

Or maybe it's because the abbreviation of LDC is so deeply imprinted on Teacher Tang's graffiti wall and in Teacher Tang's heart.

In short, he inexplicably felt a sense of crisis today, and he couldn't control it.

Teacher Tang was also a little surprised. She poked Chi Lie's arm with her fingertips and said, " Don't make trouble like this. It hurts me. "

So Chi Lie's embrace relaxed again in an instant.

The abandoned stray dog was not well trained. It sucked on its owner's fingertips just to express its love, but it bit its owner's finger hard and hurt it.

But he is obedient. He finally has a family and will correct his mistakes when he knows he is wrong.

Chi Lie gently caressed the place where he had been tied, so gently that he almost lifted it up and blew on it. " I'm sorry I was anxious. I won't do this again in the future. "

He relaxed, and Teacher Tang was able to turn around with difficulty.

Teacher Tang raised her hand and touched Chi Lie's face. " It's okay. I know you didn't mean it. You just used too much strength. "

Chi Lie wanted to have his face touched, hugged, and kissed even when he didn't have a fever, and he would give them to him.

He thought that he was not indecisive, he just lacked cognition.

Seeing the sincere apology in Chi Lie's eyes, he decided to figure out what it felt like to love someone.

After all, it is better for adults not to bully children.

As expected, Chi Lie's confession to him will only be more, not less. Since he can't figure out his attitude clearly, he can only refuse. This is the most correct approach. Although Chi Lie will be sad, the ambiguous attitude is the most torturous.

At the same time, he didn't want Chi Lie to be sad all the time.

But Mr. Tang was stupid. He didn't realize that if he really didn't like Chi Lie, he wouldn't be bothered at all.

The author has something to say:

Thank you for following ~

Chapter 47 His Compromise (Part 2)

47

Chi Lie changed his clothes and went out when his cousin had just left. She must have said something to Teacher Tang. But when he asked Teacher Tang, she just shook her head and refused to say anything.

The children were all waiting to start class, so he didn't dare to ask them anything. He just sat aside and watched Teacher Tang. After feasting their eyes, they went home together.

He was looking forward to going home, there was no time more than now.

He was in the dance studio, watching Teacher Tang while perfecting the movie that would be edited into the video, adjusting the filter clarity to perfection.

I have to say that Jiang Zhi has some vision. The protagonist in the video is similar in body shape to Teacher Tang. He is in a trance between the video and Teacher Tang, satisfying his own unrealistic fantasy in disguise.

When they got home and Teacher Tang came out of the shower, Chi Lie had already set up the projector. The only thing left was for Teacher Tang to sit next to him.

Teacher Tang forgot to take her pajamas into the bathroom today, and walked towards the closet wrapped in a bathrobe. Halfway through, Chi Lie grabbed her and dragged her back.

Chi Lie: " Come watch a movie with me first. " He has been waiting for a whole day and can hardly wait even a moment longer.

Teacher Tang seemed to realize that she did not have the ability to resist him, so she did not insist and sat down at the head of the bed in her bathrobe.

I asked casually: " What movie is it? Is it so good ? "

" 'Repentance.' " Chi Lie also tried to answer naturally. This is the hottest homosexual-themed movie this year. It is adapted from real events and has a good plot and scale.

Of course, he didn't care much about the plot. All he wanted Teacher Tang to see was the scale.

Teacher Tang said that he had no intimate experience and was a straight man, so every time he expressed his desire almost strongly, Teacher Tang could not understand what he meant.

Just like today when he pressed Teacher Tang against the locker room door, but Teacher Tang thought he was just making a fuss.

He was afraid that Teacher Tang would always treat him as a " troublemaker " and a " child " , and then his chances would still be slim after a month.

Today, he wanted Teacher Tang to know clearly that he was not joking. He wanted more than just holding hands and hugging, and he did not intend to stop at kissing.

He wanted to let Teacher Tang know what signals those contacts between gays implied.

The movie opening has been played, and the plot is progressing at a fast pace. The two male protagonists quickly get to know each other and become entangled because of various things.

And he kept hinting at it from the beginning.

The protagonist becomes a colleague and is assigned to the same dormitory. He will tell Teacher Tang, " Teacher Tang, they just met and started living together. "

The protagonist was playing by the stream, a gun went off accidentally, and someone exposed the reaction.

Seeing such a scene, any normal person would be embarrassed, just like Teacher Tang who didn't blink for a moment, but Chi Lie was not like that.

He had slowly moved behind Teacher Tang, almost half hugging her, and Teacher Tang, either because she was too focused or acquiesced, did not stop him from getting closer.

He leaned forward and rested his chin on Teacher Tang's shoulder. " Teacher Tang, we've been like this before, too. That time in the bathroom, you also fell into my arms. "

He wanted Teacher Tang to establish a connection between them and the protagonist, so that when the protagonist had sex, Teacher Tang would naturally think of them.

He wanted to ask Teacher Tang, you know, I just want to be like this with you, every day.

This time, Teacher Tang still didn't say anything. He stuffed the atmosphere – filled popcorn in his hand into Chi Lie's mouth and said, " Look carefully and don't talk. "

Chi Lie knew that he was shy, and he couldn't help but chuckle while holding him. The hot air he exhaled hit the back of Teacher Tang's neck, turning it red, and then crawled along the neck to the chest.

Teacher Tang watches a movie, and he watches Teacher Tang.

Perhaps because Teacher Tang wanted to change directly into pajamas, the bathrobe was not tied very tightly, especially when sitting like this, her collarbone, shoulders and neck were clearly exposed.

From his angle, he could vaguely see the slightly raised chest and something even more unspeakable.

He had never been very good at anything, and when he saw these, his throat rolled over, and he couldn't suppress the urge to swallow and bite. He was so close to Teacher Tang that, as expected, he was discovered.

But Teacher Tang misunderstood.

The movie scene is a close-up of the protagonist's wet body. " Do you think he is good-looking? "

" Hmm? " He looked up and responded quickly, " I think they all look the same, none of them are as pretty as you. I was staring at you just now and forgot about the movie. Are there any important plots? "

Unexpectedly, Teacher Tang didn't care about his question and actually asked: Were " you really looking at me just now? "

He was stunned for a moment before he realized that he should be surprised. Teacher Tang cared about who he was looking at and was jealous of his gaze.

The jealous person is still sitting there with his eyes fixed on the screen, where the protagonists are being ambiguous in the double dormitory. The sticky touches and the movement of the camera fill their bedroom with a hot atmosphere.

" Of course I'm looking at you. " Chi Lie's embrace tightened, and every second the movie progressed, the more torment he suffered.

The protagonist is obviously braver than him. The two of them have been entangled on the narrow single bed. There should have been an imagery empty shot later, but Chi Lie has replaced it with a short video sent by Jiang Zhi.

He edited the video himself, and was clear about every time point. At the moment when the revealing shot appeared, his five fingers suddenly clenched around Teacher Tang's waist. Teacher Tang groaned in pain, and he could no longer bear it. He reached his hand into the collar of her bathrobe and placed it on Teacher Tang's chest.

The protagonist's figure swayed on the wall, and his uncontrollable bold breathing wrapped around the hoarse words, " Teacher Tang, your heartbeat is so fast. "

There was a video in front and Chi Lie in the back. Tang Shiqi felt that she was in a dilemma. " I can feel the heartbeat through the clothes ..."

Chi Lie couldn't help but laugh, and rubbed Teacher Tang's ear with the tip of his nose, " It's not your heartbeat that I want to feel, Teacher Tang. "

Teacher Tang shivered in his arms and said tremblingly: " I didn't promise you this ..."

Teacher Tang's voice was too soft and was almost drowned out by the loud shouting in the movie. She stretched out her hands helplessly, wanting to stop his wrist and cover her ears. He suddenly had an idea to amplify the sound of the " movie " infinitely.

Teacher Tang became even more panicked and turned to grab the remote control, " Xiao Zhi hasn't gone to bed yet, don't let him hear it! "

Chi Lie didn't make any extra movements with his hands. He just held Teacher Tang's left chest and locked him in his arms. With his other hand, he held up the remote control. " Then let me touch you for a while, just for a while, okay? "

Teacher Tang said nothing and looked at him with a face full of grievance.

Desire overcame his compassion, the movie scene became more intense, and he continued to amplify the sound without shame. Now, not to mention Jiang Zhi, he suspected that his cousin next door could also hear it while she was lying on the wall.

Teacher Tang tried to take the remote control again, but he had no advantage in terms of height or strength.

Teacher Tang's eyes were red with anxiety, but she finally compromised with him, turned around, and leaned into his arms, " Turn it off ..."

He pressed his cheek against Teacher Tang's. He was already turning down the volume with his hands, but he was still bullying her. " What do you mean? I don't understand. "

Teacher Tang put her hands on his left chest, which was still resting there wantonly, and rubbed it through the back of her hand. " I'll let you touch me, just turn off the sound ..."

Chapter 48 He Responds Gently

48

He inserted three videos in total, and by the second one, Teacher Tang had already softened like a marshmallow in his arms. But Teacher Tang promised him that no matter what, she would watch the movie to the end.

The bathrobe was crumpled on the side of the bed. He wrapped himself and Teacher Tang in the quilt, stroking Teacher Tang's soft belly with his hands.

Taking advantage of the transition, Chi Lie asked: " Teacher Tang, how do you feel? "

Although Teacher Tang always accepted everything he said, he believed that even if someone else used the same method to force him, Teacher Tang would still agree.

He thought that he was not special to Teacher Tang, it was just that Teacher Tang had too good a temper and it was the first time he had met such a bastard.

Teacher Tang is simply the embodiment of submissiveness. She was awkward and ashamed at the beginning, but now she has completely given up and collapsed in his arms, letting him rub her as he pleases.

Teacher Tang didn't answer him and kept asking: " Is it annoying? Is it disgusting? "

He actually felt a little regretful and not very satisfied, because Teacher Tang was a straight man, and he was afraid that Teacher Tang would think that since they were both men, what was the big deal about touching each other.

He didn't want this to happen. He wanted to let Teacher Tang know that they had gone beyond the boundaries of friends or brothers and there was no way they could get away with it in a month.

Teacher Tang kept his promise and watched the movie even though he was being tortured until his face turned red and he was out of breath. So he was a little slow in receiving the information and replied after a while: " It's not annoying, it's not disgusting. This movie is still quite good, but there are too many shots, which are completely unnecessary. "

Chi Lie didn't care about the movie at all, so he asked the first question again, " What does it feel like? "

Tang Shiqi didn't know how to answer.

His ex didn't like to be close to him, but when he likes someone, he likes that kind of dependence and closeness.

He wants a hug when he gets home from get off work, he wants to lean on his lover to while away the boring weekend, and he also wants to have the body warmth and love of his other half when he sleeps.

But Liu Dingcheng never gave him these, and even classified the warmth he liked as pretentious and childish. He once agreed with Liu Dingcheng's statement.

Maybe it was because the movie made him too immersive, he had the illusion that he and Chi Lie were lovers, and he gradually lost himself in Chi Lie's touch, as if he had a lover who really loved him and stuck to him all the time during the holidays.

He was embarrassed to admit that during his brief moment of loss, he felt comfortable and happy.

He evaded the question, " I don't feel anything. Just watch the movie and stop talking. "

Chi Lie sighed silently, feeling inexplicably aggrieved.

Sure enough, Teacher Tang didn't feel anything.

Sexual orientation was like an unbreakable barrier. Even though he threw his thousand pounds of love at her, Teacher Tang was unable to receive it.

He thought that after getting what he wanted today, he should be very satisfied, but now he feels empty.

He even felt that even if he really seduced Teacher Tang into having a relationship, the essence of their relationship would not change at all.

It would be better if he was a girl, maybe he would have more chances.

He suddenly regretted saying "creating memories".

If he had not said so at the beginning, his open pursuit now would at least let Teacher Tang know that he wanted Tang Shiqi as a person.

But now, everything he did fell into the category of making memories.

He was so scared that Teacher Tang would think he was playing house for a month and ignore all his expressions of love.

Perhaps it was because the tone of the movie was not cheerful, he started to daydream along with the background music, and fell into a negative mood. All his determination in the past disappeared, and he lost control for a moment.

Teacher Tang hid in his arms for a while, then turned around and asked him, "Why are you sighing? Is it because of the movie? Or because of me?"

Chi Lie put his mouth on Teacher Tang's neck, "You hurt my heart. Teacher Tang, can you consider a boy?"

He started to talk nonsense, "It's OK if I'm not the one. Can you not be so rigid about gender? I feel like I'm the only one performing a one-man show."

Maybe it was because the sadness in his voice was too obvious, Teacher Tang finally diverted most of her attention from the movie to him, sat up, and looked at him sideways, "What's wrong? Am I not accompanying you well?"

The protagonists in the movie are about to be separated from each other, and they make their final lovemaking in the staff dormitory. The emotions are so strong in the eyes of the two actors when they look at each other.

His hand still stayed on Teacher Tang. "When I touched you, my heart beat very fast, my breathing became disordered, and I felt that the blood in my body was going to burn me to death."

He tightened his embrace and sniffed Teacher Tang's neck, "You know what? I can smell you. I really like you. I lied to you about a month and memories. What I want is not that simple. Do you understand me?"

Before Teacher Tang had time to think about his nonsense, he answered for everyone else, "You don't understand. You don't like me at all. You don't have any feelings."

It was clearly him who forced others to take off their clothes for him, and they agreed, but he is still here nitpicking and feeling sad.

He went too far, but Teacher Tang would tolerate his excesses.

Teacher Tang immediately understood Chi Lie's misunderstanding.

His so-called reserve and shyness prevented him from telling the truth, which made Chi Lie so sad, and his heart was filled with sour guilt.

The movie has reached the part where the third video clip is inserted, and Tang Shiqi has clearly realized that the situation between him and Chi Lie has been unclear for a long time. And he slowly accepted it without realizing it.

He stretched out his arms and put them around Chi Lie's neck. "I don't hate it. I like it. Your hands make me ... make me feel very comfortable."

He returned to his role as an elder and a teacher.

Patting Chi Lie on the back, " Give me some more time to think about it. "

Chi Lie's mood instantly rose from the bottom of the valley to space. No matter whether Teacher Tang's " think about it " was a delaying tactic or the truth, he was greatly comforted.

Chi Lie feels that the biggest issue that Teacher Tang needs to think about is his sexual orientation, that is, how to turn himself into a lesbian.

He never imagined that Teacher Tang didn't need this step at all.

What Teacher Tang really wants is whether or not to step out of the safe zone she has built for Chi Lie again, and whether or not to face the possible quarrels, deceptions, disappointments, and the frustration after pouring her feelings into it again.

As for his previous confusion about whether he liked Chi Lie or not, he thought he already knew.

The protagonist in the movie said: If you didn't like someone, how could you be willing to kiss, hug, clean up another person's mess without feeling annoyed, and even dare to react to them.

He was willing to accept Chi Lie's " offense " and enjoyed it. When he went shopping, he would think about what Chi Lie needed, and he couldn't bear to see Chi Lie sad.

He likes Chi Lie.

Wait a little longer, until he gathers up the courage to face again the love that once hurt him.

The author has something to say:

There is another one in the afternoon

Monday and Tuesday off

Wednesday night 9:00 double update

Chapter 49 His Changes

49

" Then let's continue. " After getting the promise, Chi Lie cheered up again, continued to watch movies, continued to contact Teacher Tang, and became more and more intensified, developing from top to bottom.

Due to time constraints, he didn't adjust the third video very well and the images were not cut properly.

Teacher Tang finally saw the clue, " This chin, this picture quality ... Chi Lie, did you download a pirated version ? "

Chi Lie chuckled. Teacher Tang really trusted him too much. He didn't even think about how it was possible that high-definition and uncensored private organs could appear in a once popular theater movie.

Without getting an answer, Teacher Tang pulled Chi Lie's hand away from her thigh, " You were the one who wanted to watch the movie, come and take a look, is this quality ..."

Halfway through his speech, he discovered something wrong. The protagonist of the movie clearly had no tattoos, but the person receiving the current clip had an obvious rose tattoo on his chest.

He finally discovered the truth and said in shock: " Chi Lie, did you edit the film in? "

Chi Lie laughed even more wildly and asked him: " How is it? Does it look good? "

Unexpectedly, this was actually the case. Tang Shiqi stared at Chi Lie with wide eyes, clenched her fist and punched him on the thigh, " How can you be so mean ... I don't want to watch it anymore. "

When he first got to the first part, he was being bullied by Chi Lie. The people in the video were immersed in openness, but he was filled with shame and anger.

But he had to admit that the video did affect his emotions. The touch in Chi Lie's palm was infinitely magnified, and he felt that even his breathing was hot.

Even now, the skin on my heart that was rubbed by Chi Lie's rough palm is still aching. It's probably painful, anyway, it has penetrated deep into the bones and blood and cannot be ignored.

In the second part, the focus was more on Chi Lie's emotions, but he didn't pay much attention. Now, the two of them were barely opening their hearts to each other. Chi Lie's actions towards him were much gentler, and the parts he touched were also much more private. He could only force himself to focus on the movie to restrain himself from being moved.

But Chi Lie was too much of a jerk. Wherever the superior's hands went in the video, those parts of his body would be hit by Chi Lie in reality. He unconsciously confused the video with them.

It was not until the pain in his chest came back and he saw the rose tattoo in the video that he realized he had been fooled by Chi Lie again.

The culprit was still hugging Teacher Tang and acting like a spoiled child, " You promised me that you would watch me to the end no matter what. "

Teacher Tang muttered, " No wonder you asked me to promise you this. "

" Actually, I was quite scared. " Chi Lie unconsciously circled Teacher Tang's belly button. " At that time, I was so focused on making you open up that I always forgot about your orientation. I was also worried that you would feel disgusted. "

As he spoke, he moved his hand down, touched it slightly, and concluded, " Look, you don't feel anything, do you feel ..."

Before he finished speaking, the feeling under his hand changed slightly. He almost laughed out loud with the corners of his mouth bent. " Teacher Tang, are you really a straight man? "

Tang Shiqi did not give a direct answer, nor did he dare to move. He had tried his best to endure it. It was all Chi Lie's fault. His actions were so sudden that he did not have time to dodge.

His face was instantly dyed with blood, " I, I need to go to the bathroom. "

Chi Lie raised his eyebrows, " Do you want me to go with you? "

Tang Shiqi was both embarrassed and annoyed, " Stop teasing me, let me go to the bathroom ..."

Although Chi Lie really wanted to go in and was sure that he could get Teacher Tang's consent, he decided not to do so.

Don't bully them too much.

Chi Lie relaxed his embrace, " I'll wait here for you to come back and watch a movie with me. "

Teacher Tang ran out like a little rabbit, his back looked panic-stricken, while Chi Lie had a smile on his face. He felt that he had never been as happy as he was today in the past 19 years. From the beginning until now, the corners of his mouth had never fallen.

Because Teacher Tang's contrast is so cute.

When the dance class was over today, he met Teacher Tang who was communicating with parents, and he looked very different.

Teacher Tang can communicate with every parent with different personalities using appropriate topics and in appropriate ways. That is what is called adult socializing.

But Teacher Tang is a different person when teaching children. She is gentle, uses cute repetitions in her speech, and always squats and smiles.

The most unique thing is the way Teacher Tang looks in front of him, melting, sweet, and coquettish.

The age difference between them is very obvious. When teaching him, comforting him and protecting him, Teacher Tang is like an elder and an older brother.

But when Teacher Tang nestled in his arms, she was so obedient and would even be coaxed into bed and have her clothes taken off.

After about ten minutes, Teacher Tang finally came out. His hair was wet. He probably washed his face to calm down.

Teacher Tang got on the bed, feeling that it was inappropriate, and went straight into Chi Lie's arms, looking at the bold scene that was still lingering, and asked: " I only promised to watch the movie with you. This is not part of the movie. Skip it. "

He also followed Chi Lie's example and looked for some bargaining chips to threaten him, but he found that the only bargaining chip that could balance Chi Lie was himself.

He accepted his fate and said, " You jump over it, or I won't let you touch it. "

Chi Lie felt that his roles and Teacher Tang's had been reversed. He was grinning from ear to ear today, while Teacher Tang had a stern face.

He traced Teacher Tang's ribs with one hand and reached for the remote control with the other hand, moving the progress bar to the normal plot of the movie.

Even though he had done something so excessive, he was forgiven by Teacher Tang simply by speeding up the progress bar.

Teacher Tang immediately relaxed his brows, used his arms as a pillow, held him in his arms, and prevented him from moving.

The more obedient Teacher Tang was, the more he wanted to bully her. He leaned over to Teacher Tang's ear and said, " Teacher Tang, other people can't do it to the same extent as us when they are in love. Did you know that ? "

Tang Shiqi was finally able to watch a normal movie and was immersed in the plot. She didn't care about the adults' face for a moment and blurted out, " I don't know. I only had one relationship and he was sexually cold to me. I don't know what people do when they are in love. "

It's always like this.

He tried to tease Teacher Tang, but he was always teased in return , and was completely overwhelmed by Teacher Tang's frankness and cuteness.

Seeing Teacher Tang's focused look, he stopped disturbing her and crossed his legs to make her sit more comfortably.

At the end of the movie, the two protagonists were separated due to various force majeure and failed to have a happy reunion.

Tang Shiqi is a person with strong empathy. Although she didn't cry, she was obviously depressed. It was 'Alas' so difficult for them to be together in their era. Why can't they have a happy ending ? "

Then he sighed: " It's so difficult now. "

Chi Lie just wanted to expand Teacher Tang's acceptance range, but he didn't want to make anyone sad.

Maybe he should take comfort in the fact that the ending is somewhat open-ended, and maybe it's a perfect ending.

The protagonist must have achieved happiness in another parallel world.

But he took a different approach and patted Teacher Tang on the head, " It doesn't matter if they are not together, we will always be together. "

Teacher Tang almost nodded in agreement with his comforting tone, but when she came to her senses, she elbowed him back, " You're so sarcastic again. "

But fortunately, it also successfully dispelled the heaviness brought by the movie.

The author has something to say:

I will take leave for the next two days

Before 9pm on Wednesday, double update

bugs in the plot before Chapter 50 , please see the comment section 43 for details

50

A few days later, Chi Lie and Teacher Tang brought Yaya and several other children, as well as the parents who came with them because they were worried, to City S.

Due to venue and local policy issues, the performance was postponed for five days, but they had already arrived when they received the notice.

After coordination among all parties, the organizer took care of the food, clothing, housing and transportation of all the accompanying personnel, and everyone unexpectedly got a short vacation.

Poor Jiang Zhi was left at home, and the days without anyone to cook increased from three days to more than five days.

Parents lived with their children, while Chi Lie and Teacher Tang were arranged to live in single rooms. Fearing that it would cause a bad influence, he went to his room first, and when the voices of the parents in the corridor faded away, he dragged his luggage to Teacher Tang's room.

Teacher Tang's door was not closed.

He originally thought that Teacher Tang had left the door open for him, so he took a step inside and heard the voice of a strange man.

The man said in a friendly tone, " Shiqi, don't be so hostile to me. We need a chance to open our hearts. "

" No need. " Teacher Tang's tone was very cold, different from any tone he had ever heard. He had never seen Teacher Tang so cold and defensive.

The man said to himself, " Well, you just arrived, you may be tired, let's talk another day. "

Then footsteps were heard and the man walked towards the door. He also raised his feet and walked inside, dragging his luggage.

The room was not big, and the big bed was just around the corner. The two people collided head-on.

The man was shorter and thinner than him, with metal-framed glasses and a gentle smile on his face, looking mature and hypocritical.

The man turned to Tang Shiqi and asked, " Shiqi, a guest is here. Can you introduce him? "

Chi Lie felt inexplicably uncomfortable after hearing this. Why should this man speak to him in the tone of a master?

He ignored the meaningless politeness and walked straight in. Before Teacher Tang could speak, he took off his coat and threw it on Teacher Tang's bed, silently declaring who was the master here.

Even though he was annoyed, Tang Shiqi still maintained basic courtesy and introduced him, " This is my friend Chi Lie. Chi Lie, this is an old friend of mine, Liu Dingcheng. "

Chi Lie nodded while lying on the bed. It turned out to be the one hanging on the wall. He was too disdainful to speak. Although he didn't know what kind of entanglement this man had with Teacher Tang, he was jealous that this man could be recorded on the graffiti wall by Teacher Tang.

Liu Dingcheng's eyes were filled with joy. " Will you still mention me to your friends? "

Tang Shiqi was afraid that Chi Lie would hear something, so she hurried to get rid of him. " It was just a casual mention. I'm tired and want to rest for a while. See you later. "

Liu Dingcheng smiled and nodded, took a deep look at Chi Lie who was still lying on the bed, and couldn't help but said, " Shiqi, you can bring your relatives and friends. Report to the organizer and they will arrange a room. Look at your friend ..."

Tang Shiqi didn't want to say more, " I know, I'll report it. "

There was some embarrassment in Liu Dingcheng's smile. " Rest first and don't worry. I will help you report now. "

Chi Lie at the side finally couldn't stand it anymore, he kicked off his shoes and lay down in Teacher Tang's bed, " Doctor Liu, don't worry, Teacher Tang and I are used to sleeping together, I will suffer from insomnia if we are separated, I can just sleep here. "

Liu Dingcheng's face darkened visibly, " You ..."

" We are going to take a break, you can go back. " Tang Shiqi stood up to interrupt him and simply pushed Liu Dingcheng out, because continuing to talk would only make things more chaotic.

In the end, Liu Dingcheng was forcibly sent away by Teacher Tang. It was a long time after the sound of the door closing faded away that Teacher Tang dragged his weak steps back to sit beside the bed.

Liu Dingcheng left, but Chi Lie didn't feel happy. Instead, he felt more depressed. He jumped off the bed, opened his suitcase, and took out two or three wet wipes.

Teacher Tang looked at him blankly, but he didn't care. He squatted down and held up Teacher Tang's palm, wiping it inch by inch with a wet wipe and rubbing it finger by finger.

Tang Shiqi knew Chi Lie was a mysophobe, but she was still confused and dissatisfied. "What are you doing? I washed my hands when I came back. They are not dirty. Do you dislike me?"

Chi Lie said nothing, and wiped his other hand. After wiping, he wiped away the moisture with a tissue. Only then was he satisfied and kissed the fingertips of both hands.

Seeing that Teacher Tang was not happy, he coaxed her: "I don't mind you if you don't wash your hands after peeing, but I do mind you for not washing your hands after touching a wild man just now."

Teacher Tang's distressed expression immediately disappeared, and she smiled lightly, "Just tell me, I can just wash my hands."

He inserted his fingers into Teacher Tang's fingers and interlocked theirs, "I will wipe it for you myself."

After saying that, he restrained Teacher Tang's hands in this position, stood up, raised his legs and pressed Teacher Tang onto the bed, "You've been in the car for a whole day, and I didn't hug you or kiss you, why didn't you come to me?"

Teacher Tang felt a little apologetic. Besides their vague feelings, they also had the promise to create memories, and he did not fulfill his obligation today.

He explained to Boss Chi, "I was always taking care of the kids, and I forgot about it when I got busy. I won't do that again in the future."

But Chi Lie was not satisfied with this explanation at all. He forgot about it when he was busy. Is he so dispensable?

His hand slipped under Teacher Tang's hem, "We need to make up for today. Let me touch you, okay?"

Teacher Tang's cheeks immediately became hot, but he still nodded obediently. In his opinion, a touch only floats on the surface of the body and is easier to accept than a kiss.

But in Chi Lie's heart, caressing is equivalent to foreplay of sex, which is a violation of the boundary and can easily make his throat hot.

He used the palm of his hand to feel the curve of Teacher Tang's hand, and was about to free his other hand when the door of the room suddenly opened.

The sound of the woman's high heels could not be stopped. Before the two of them had time to react, the cousin appeared in front of the bed.

Cousin: "Teacher Tang, Yaya's summer class ..."

My cousin didn't get to finish her words. When she looked again, she saw Chi Lie pulling back the quilt and covering Teacher Tang up.

Her brows were slightly furrowed, but she didn't look shocked. She just seemed to be hesitant to speak. "Forget it, I came at the wrong time. Let's talk tomorrow."

When he was about to reach the door, he didn't turn around and reminded her: "Teacher Tang, think carefully about what I told you. Remember to lock the door next time."

Chi Lie did not accept his cousin's condescending tone, and was even more angry about being interrupted. He shouted at the door, " You should think about it carefully. Remember to knock on the door next time you enter someone else's room! "

He rarely spoke so loudly, especially when he was next to Teacher Tang. Teacher Tang reached out from under the quilt and touched his face. " Don't be angry, it's my fault for forgetting to lock the door. "

Chi Lie rubbed Teacher Tang's palm lovingly, " How could it be, she just didn't knock on the door. "

But the door was not what he should be concerned about. If he heard correctly, he had more important issues.

" Teacher Tang, my cousin asked you to think carefully about what she said. What did you say? And when did you say it? "

The author has something to say:

Sorry, there was a small bug before , it has been fixed

This first draft has been saved in its entirety. I will revise and perfect it quickly, and update it soon, and try to finish it for you next week.

I'm sorry that I'm too busy looking for a job right now, but I will complete the work seriously.

I will update it later 【 3 chapters *4000 words】

Make up for the leave you requested. Let's see tomorrow morning.

Chapter 51 Listen to him, his past
(superior)

" Teacher Tang, my cousin asked you to think carefully about what she said. What did you say? And when did you say it? "

" It's not a big deal. Do you want to stay with me? I'll help you pack your luggage. "

As Teacher Tang started to struggle to get rid of the quilt, she just managed to free her other hand, but Chi Lie grabbed her wrist and lifted it above her head, " Don't change the subject. "

He firmly suppressed Teacher Tang with his hands, but lowered his head to show weakness, buried it in Teacher Tang's shoulders and neck, and whispered softly with his lips pressed against Teacher Tang's skin, " Tell me, are you closer to your cousin than to me? Yes, she is a woman, and you like women. "

He began to reflect " sincerely " , " She knows you are straight, but she still wants to pester you. You must be annoyed, right? Did she say a lot of bad things about me? Do you believe it? "

His voice gradually became more and more uneasy. He was pretending at first, but in the last sentence, he was truly worried.

In the eyes of his cousin, he must be a bad guy. He is naturally energetic, but it is difficult for him to be interested in anything, so he will find various things to vent his energy.

In the first week after moving to his cousin's house, he did a lot of " glorious things " . He was afraid that Teacher Tang would know about his past and have a worse impression of him.

Then he was really wronged, he had clearly changed.

After meeting Teacher Tang, all his interests and energy had a place to go. He no longer had to do meaningless and boring things and became a "good boy" in Teacher Tang's eyes.

"I believe in you" more than once, which is something he cherishes very much. He doesn't want to erode Teacher Tang's trust, not at all.

He slowly let go of Teacher Tang's wrist, put his arm around Teacher Tang's waist, and kissed Teacher Tang's shoulder flatteringly, "I know you have a secret, but you still don't tell me, Teacher Tang, I feel uncomfortable."

Teacher Tang was a soft-hearted person by nature, and had gradually lost his resistance to hugs and kisses. He was always willing to satisfy Chi Lie's requests.

He first talked about some of the things that Chi Lie was concerned about.

Tang Shiqi: "Your cousin and I have talked about this several times. She mentioned some of your past when she came to pick up Yaya."

Chi Lie was worried. "What happened? I can tell you the truth. What she said is not true."

Tang Shiqi could sense his emotions and gently stroked his back, "But I think what she said is true."

Chi Lie's anxiety reached its peak.

Teacher Tang continued to soothe her gently, from the back of her neck to her back, "She said you were a bad person before, getting into trouble every day, but after you met me you became obedient."

Teacher Tang smiled and relieved his worries. "I feel very happy when I hear that. It's as if I made you obedient. I feel quite accomplished."

Chi Lie felt relieved, and he leaned over to give Teacher Tang a loud kiss on the cheek, "It's not like, it's you. You have to keep up the good work and send the Buddha to the west, understand?"

He looked at Teacher Tang, whose eyebrows curved with approval, and continued to ask: "So what did she make you think?"

Tang Shiqi pondered for a while, actually there was nothing he couldn't say.

That day, Chi Lie wore Jiang Zhi's training clothes and used his body to cover himself, and was seen by his cousin.

When Chi Lie went to the locker room to change his clothes, his cousin said something to him. My cousin got straight to the point. "I know Chi Lie's situation. I won't interfere with Teacher Tang's personal feelings, but there may be children and parents coming up at any time. At least be aware of the impact."

He hurriedly explained: "We are not that kind of relationship, just now it was just..."

The cousin didn't care much about his explanation and interrupted, "I don't care about your relationship, and I don't want to intervene, but some rumors have spread from the school to the streets."

My cousin's face was heavy. "If you want to open this dance class, you have to let parents trust their children to you. Now they think it's just rumors, but what if they see it with their own eyes?"

He didn't say anything at the time. He had a blind spot in his cognition about what boundaries were, but he knew that people would have preconceived ideas.

If the purpose is to prove that he and Chi Lie have a special relationship, then even if you see him buying breakfast for Chi Lie, it can serve as evidence.

If the news really spread on the streets, he would be back to the state before he hid in the small county town, and all the stability he had worked so hard to build would be lost.

He needs to talk to Chi Lie and find some solutions that both parties are satisfied with.

However, he was too busy preparing for the performance in the next few days and he couldn't find a suitable opportunity to ask Chi Lie for advice.

Tang Shiqi told Chi Lie everything her cousin had said. " I think what Yaya's mother said makes sense. Parents are very sensitive about their children's affairs. I just didn't know how to tell you. "

Can " we be more careful when we're out in public ? " He put his hand on Chi Lie's shoulder and grabbed his collar. " I promised you a month of intimacy, but now I'm backing off because I'm worried about my career. Will you be angry? "

Chi Lie tightened his grip on Teacher Tang's waist and turned him over, causing the two of them to switch positions.

This time, he stroked Mr. Tang's back to relax him. " If I'm angry, will you comfort me? "

Tang Shiqi had never seen Chi Lie really angry, but he felt that it would be a very difficult matter. " Coax him. "

" Okay then. " Chi Lie bent his legs to separate Teacher Tang's knees, protected Teacher Tang's back with one hand, and supported himself on the bed with the other hand to sit up. Teacher Tang sat face to face with him, on his legs.

In this position, Teacher Tang was half a head taller than him. He looked up and kissed Teacher Tang's chin, " Well, I'm angry now, how are you going to comfort me? "

Teacher Tang smiled helplessly and said, " You can only express your anger with your mouth? "

But he still understood what Chi Lie meant. Chi Lie's gesture was clearly asking for a kiss.

Although Chi Lie is tall, with mature features, and his words and deeds are not as childish as a student, Chi Lie likes to act clingy and spoiled with him, and whenever he gets the chance, he will hug him tightly.

Like a puppy that needs love.

He held Chi Lie's face, kissed him lightly between the eyebrows, and gave him a plan that he thought would satisfy him. " Let's keep our distance from each other outside. I'll listen to you when we get home, okay? "

I'll do whatever you say. These four words were very attractive to Chi Lie. He lowered his head and buried it deep in Teacher Tang's neck, sniffing hard, using Teacher Tang's clean breath to dispel his instantly aroused desire.

" Okay, so does that count as being at home now? Does the agreement count as being effective? "

Sensing Chi Lie's change, Teacher Tang was stunned for a moment, then immediately stepped away with his knees straight. " I have my bottom line, too. Sex is not within my scope of obedience! "

Looking at Teacher Tang's cute frightened face, Chi Lie kissed Teacher Tang's chin again, close to her lips, " Then what is Teacher Tang's bottom line? Can we kiss? "

Tang Shiqi felt a little guilty. He couldn't do what Chi Lie wanted. " I have something else to tell you. "

(Down)

" I have something else I want to tell you. "

Teacher Tang's voice became a little low, and his body slumped, as if he had become tired in an instant.

Chi Lie had no choice but to suppress his impulse and listen to what others were saying first.

" My ex was a bit bad. He gave me a lot of wrong ideas about intimate relationships. The other day I chatted with my ex-friend and told him about us. "

That was his childhood friend, who strongly opposed his relationship with his ex , Liu Dingcheng.

His family is one of the richest in the capital, and even though his sexual orientation has never been made public, he still has many suitors.

Liu Dingcheng seemed the most stable one among the rich kids, which was in line with his orientation at the time, so they naturally got together.

He helped Liu Dingcheng a lot.

But for two or three years, the most intimate thing they did was kissing, a very brief kiss.

At that time, he was just a college student in his early twenties. He grew up under the protection of his parents and was excessively naive.

He didn't think much about it and thought that his boyfriend was rare, conservative, clean, and reassuring.

The first accident was when his childhood friend ran into Liu Dingcheng behaving intimately with someone else, and he realized that something was wrong.

But he really believed in Liu Dingcheng. Liu Dingcheng was older than him, had entered society earlier than him, and was more mature and outstanding than him.

Liu Dingcheng often told him about his achievements and pointed out his shallowness subtly.

" You who study art don't understand this. "

" You don't have to understand, and you can't understand, just leave it to me. "

" You don't have to work, I can support you, and besides, what can you do well ? "

" Your dad didn't want you to study economics. You might as well continue dancing. It's also a strength. Now you can only be my parasite. "

To the extent that he would ask Liu Dingcheng before making any choice, as if whatever Liu Dingcheng said was right, and a shallow art student like him would never be as good as Liu Dingcheng.

In fact, Liu Dingcheng received countless help due to his family background.

Regarding the first man, Liu Dingcheng said that he and that man were just friends, and not all men in the world are gay , so holding hands and hugging are normal.

Liu Dingcheng said that the second man grew up in a foreign country, where kissing is basic etiquette and kissing between friends is normal.

Similar incidents occurred one after another. After another two or three years, Liu Dingcheng could be very close to his friends, but he still kept his distance from him.

The initial arguments such as " he cherishes me ", " he is more traditional ", and " he is quite normal in other aspects " could no longer convince Tang Shiqi.

It turned out that he was just a gambling game for those rich kids.

The queue for adulthood when he turned 18 was organized by his childhood friend, and happened to be seen by that group of playboys, and it became a casual bet: whoever catches him will be treated by the others in turn for a month.

Liu Dingcheng succeeded. According to the bet, he should have gotten rid of Tang Shiqi in a week. But Liu Dingcheng was greedy for the help that Tang Shiqi's family background could bring, and he also found out Tang Shiqi's " stupidity " , which wasted nearly five years.

What happened later was extremely absurd. His childhood friend sent him a lot of explicit photos and told him that his boyfriend was having sex outside . The picture of four or five people entangled made him sick, and he began to feel lucky that nothing happened between him and Liu Dingcheng.

Someone just couldn't stand Liu Dingcheng and deliberately messed with him. Tang Shiqi, as his " boyfriend ", was also implicated. His sexual orientation was exposed, and people assumed that he was in those censored and explicit photos.

At that time, he was already preparing a dance studio and was considering breaking up amid the coldness. His new life that was about to begin was disrupted and he was inexplicably labeled with some dirty reputation.

Out of consideration for his parents, people did not talk about him too blatantly, but the slander behind his back was enough to destroy his psychology. His smooth life of 24 years was broken by an unfortunate love.

Then he hid in a small county town.

After breaking away from Liu Dingcheng's PUA , he began to explore what he really wanted in his heart and learned to make his own decisions. He can like pink and also do a good job in his career.

But in terms of feelings, I am still working on it.

He understood that estrangement between lovers was abnormal, but he had not yet figured out the boundaries of intimacy between friends.

He lay in Chi Lie's arms, hiding his gender information, only talking about his ex and the incident. He still didn't know how to confess his sexual orientation to Chi Lie. Given his and Chi Lie's current situation, confessing his sexual orientation would be a disguised confession, and he was not ready yet.

I just whispered my thoughts, " Friends should be able to hold hands and hug each other, as long as they don't kiss. Kissing should be okay, but oral sex is not allowed, and sex is even more not allowed. I know this. "

Chi Lie was instantly filled with guilt and heartache. The tolerance of Teacher Tang, on which he relied to get more and more things, was the result of the cognitive confusion caused by the pua of his predecessor.

He hugged Teacher Tang and gently stroked the soft hair on the back of his head. " Friends can hold hands and hug, but kissing depends on the situation. For example, our kiss can only be done with me, not with other friends. "

Teacher Tang leaned her head on Chi Lie's shoulder, " I know this too. My childhood friend told me. He said that I was keeping you hanging by being too close to you while not agreeing to your confession. "

He immediately explained, " I'm not keeping you hanging. I'm not that kind of person. "

" I know. " Chi Lie lowered his voice unconsciously. Teacher Tang trained him to be gentle. " We are different. I have said it many times. Do whatever you want. If you are confused, follow me . You will never need to feel burdened. "

After finishing his words and pulling himself out of his memories, Teacher Tang regained his energy and sat up in Chi Lie's arms, only to find that Chi Lie looked even more worried than he did, like the person involved.

He smiled and lifted the corner of Chi Lie's mouth with his fingertips, " What are you doing? I told you this because I wanted to tell you that I didn't keep you hanging, and why I didn't agree to kiss you. Those things are in the past, and I don't care about them anymore. "

He rubbed Chi Lie's cheek, " Anyway, you can only do those things after you fall in love, and you have to do those things. When this performance is over, I have something to tell you. "

At that time, he and Liu Dingcheng parted unhappily, and many things were not explained clearly, so that Liu Dingcheng actually had the nerve to pester him again.

The organizer was a friend of Liu Dingcheng, and he only found out about it when he arrived. Since he is here, he should make the best of it. He should take this opportunity to make things clear with Liu Dingcheng and apologize to Chi Lie for hiding the fact of his sexual orientation. When he was in the small county town, he was still hesitant about " love ". It was not until he came to S City and met Liu Dingcheng that he suddenly understood.

His fears and concerns had nothing to do with love, but with Liu Dingcheng himself.

He wants to completely overcome this person and give Chi Lie a brave lover.

Chapter 52 Where is His Bottom Line?

(superior)

In the next two or three days, Teacher Tang took the children to rehearse, and Chi Lie was there to accompany them, and occasionally he would see Liu Dingcheng coming over.

Teacher Tang and Liu Dingcheng had talked alone outside the rehearsal room several times.

Teacher Tang would stand within his sight but prevent him from hearing.

The first time was fine, he tried to be more mature and generous, but later on it wasn't just a one or two time thing, and the conversations lasted longer and longer.

But he could see it, see the evil intentions in Liu Dingcheng's eyes, see the very small distance between the two of them, and see Teacher Tang's natural familiarity in front of Liu Dingcheng.

That was a physical habit that could not be erased even if there were conflicts and resentments.

He could see that Liu Dingcheng was once a close friend of Teacher Tang.

As time went by, the anger in his heart grew stronger and stronger, and he could no longer bear it.

So far today, Teacher Tang has been out with Liu Dingcheng for two hours. They had agreed to bring him here to increase the sense of security, but now he has nothing to do.

He didn't urge or ask, he just sat and waited in the hotel lobby. As long as Teacher Tang came back and saw him, he wouldn't have to say anything to achieve his goal.

It was really too late. When Teacher Tang came back, there were not many people in the hotel and he saw him at a glance.

Teacher Tang trotted over and asked, " Didn't I tell you to go to bed first? "

According to his original plan, he should have walked towards the elevator with a cold face without saying a word, waiting for Teacher Tang to coax him softly. But when he saw Teacher Tang running over and her worried eyes, he couldn't be cold at all. How could anyone bear to let Teacher Tang be ignored?

He stood up and took Teacher Tang's hand, " I'm afraid you'll run off with another man. How can I sleep well if you don't come back? "

Tang Shiqi didn't know whether to laugh or cry. " He and I are not even friends now. We talked about the conflicts we had over the years. After the performance, he wanted to treat me to a final farewell dinner, and then we broke up. "

He complained casually, " We're not in love, why do we have to have a farewell dinner? "

Teacher Tang was unable to answer, but just shook his hand back, " I'll tell you the address next time we have dinner, and if you're worried, just come find me, okay? "

No matter what conditions were offered, as long as it was Teacher Tang's request, he was willing to agree, " Go upstairs and sleep. I've been waiting for you here for several hours. I'm so sleepy. "

Teacher Tang could hear the grievance and uneasiness in his tough tone, and her eyes were immediately filled with apology. Even though there were a few people in the lobby, she did not break free from his hand.

This was Teacher Tang's way of comforting him, offering himself. And Chi Lie was very pleased with it, after all, what he wanted was Teacher Tang himself.

Teacher Tang even put his other hand on his wrist, getting closer to him in a way that was not unusual in public. " Are you angry? He said the organizer wanted to see me, but I went because I thought there was a third person present. "

He was very generous, " I'm not angry. I have no right to interfere with you. "

But his generosity was too easy to see through. Teacher Tang smiled and said, " You do. Now in S City, you are the person closest to me. "

Chi Lie didn't show it on his face, but he had to admit that when Teacher Tang coaxed the students, even the most difficult ones would become obedient.

But verbal coaxing could never satisfy him.

It was almost midnight and there was no one in the lobby or corridor, and the elevator was empty too.

Just as he took a step inside, before the elevator door was completely closed, Chi Lie turned around and pushed Teacher Tang into a corner.

Chi Lie started to bring up the past, " You said that we should be more careful outside and listen to me when we get home. Has Teacher Tang done that these days? "

He rubbed his head against Teacher Tang's neck, " Teacher Tang only cares about the children. She is so tired that she falls asleep as soon as she returns to her room. The adults haven't been kissed for a long time. "

Teacher Tang carefully glanced at the surveillance camera from the gap in the shadow cast by Chi Lie and defended himself, " Not for a long time, just busy these two days. "

After hearing this, Chi Lie bit Teacher Tang's neck, nibbled on it and said vaguely, " Then don't go to bed so early tonight. Give me an hour to make it up to you. "

After saying that, he felt sorry for Teacher Tang getting up early to rehearse, so he changed his tone and said, " Half an hour is fine. I won't do anything excessive. "

Teacher Tang kept his promise. Even though he was coaxed by Chi Lie into doing many excessive things, he still felt guilty that he asked Chi Lie to keep his distance during the day and could not fulfill his promise.

After hearing what Chi Lie said, he felt that he had gone even further. He had clearly promised the other person, but he kept delaying.

He raised his arm and touched Chi Lie's head, offering a solution that he could do his best. " I'm sorry I always fall asleep. If you want to ... touch me, I can sleep. "

Chi Lie's breath suddenly became as hot as fire. He tightened his arms around Teacher Tang, pinched Teacher Tang's waist, and sucked on the flesh on her neck.

Teacher Tang usually endures a lot of hardships when dancing, so he is not afraid of pain. However, Chi Lie's touch always makes his feelings infinitely magnified. He feels pain even when he is pinched a little, mixed with some other inexplicable numbness, which is extremely uncomfortable.

He called out softly, and Chi Lie must have heard it, but he still didn't let him go.

Even worse, " If I sneak somewhere else while you're asleep, won't you be worried? "

Tang Shiqi shrank back, avoiding the itchy breath on his neck, " You said before that you are not that kind of person. "

Chi Lie chuckled and cruelly told Teacher Tang the truth, " I am now. Teacher Tang has to watch me, otherwise I can't help it. "

He finally agreed and stood up to kiss Teacher Tang on the forehead. He wanted to just kiss her once, but he was addicted to Teacher Tang and unconsciously extended his kiss downwards.

Teacher Tang held her brows, nose bridge, and nose tip upright. When she moved to her lips, she finally dodged, " No kissing. "

Chi Lie smiled and said yes, and was about to bend down to kiss Teacher Tang on the chin when the elevator arrived with a ding.

He thought there was no one around and wanted to kiss her before leaving, but his arms were pulled apart by a brute force.

He immediately turned around and protected Teacher Tang behind him, blocking everything. When I looked closely, it turned out to be my cousin.

His temper immediately flared up, and he asked in a bad tone, " What are you doing? "

Because of his cousin, Teacher Tang no longer lets him kiss during the day, and he still holds a grudge about this.

My cousin also refused to give in. She frowned and said, " I want to talk to you alone. "

My cousin doesn't have a good temper, but it's easy to tell whether she's really angry or not. Looking at her serious expression now, Chi Lie feels that he should agree. After all, my cousin knows some of his secrets.

(Down)

Teacher Tang went back to his room first. Chi Lie and his cousin were at the end of the corridor, both looking unhappy.

My cousin sighed deeply, " I don't want to hide it for you anymore. I want to find a chance to tell Teacher Tang. You don't have to transfer money to me anymore. I feel guilty about it. "

From the cousin's perspective, she can accept that Chi Lie is gay, but this does not prevent her from thinking that getting married and having children is the best way to live in reality.

She thought that Teacher Tang was a straight man, and she also thought that Chi Lie, this brat, would not have any real feelings. At that time, she was overwhelmed by the ten thousand yuan a month, and she actually colluded with others to deceive Teacher Tang.

But as she watched, the two of them became more and more real.

When she saw the faint red mark under Teacher Tang's shirt collar and his increasingly defensive tone towards Chi Lie during their conversation, she felt something was wrong.

Teacher Tang's words revealed her pity and love for Chi Lie. She completely believed Chi Lie's lies and was deceived by this rich young man worth tens of millions.

Everyone else likes to say that she is selfish, but when she sees such a good person like Teacher Tang, she finally feels guilty.

She felt bad for ruining someone's happy life of getting married and having children, and for being kept in the dark by that bastard Chi Lie. Who knows when Chi Lie might return to the capital, Teacher Tang would be abandoned.

She didn't know how to express what she was thinking. She still felt that Chi Lie was a bad guy who deceived Teacher Tang out of kindness.

It's just a lie, not sincere.

Cousin: " You should have some conscience. You cheated Teacher Tang for food and drinks, so why would you cheat for anything else? "

It was rare for my cousin to calm down and reason with someone. " Can you promise to love her forever? If you bring her to your place, there will be no way for her to get married and have children. Will you be responsible? "

Chi Lie took it for granted, " Of course, I really like him, I will love him forever. "

My cousin scoffed at this. She said that men are unreliable, younger men are even less reliable, and rich dudes like Chi Lie are the most unreliable.

Just like just now, they totally ignored Teacher Tang's reputation and were always intimate with her outside. How irresponsible.

Cousin: " You should be careful outside. You have been talked about before. Don't cause trouble for Teacher Tang. "

Chi Lie originally disdained the preaching of his elders, but he actually listened to this sentence. Although he resented his cousin for alienating him from Teacher Tang , he knew in his heart that his cousin was right and he was paying attention.

But every time he felt itchy and couldn't help himself, his cousin was there.

For the first time ever, he didn't talk back . " I know. Don't tell me. I'll talk to him myself. Don't worry about it. "

My cousin didn't say anything, she looked at Chi Lie suspiciously, " Are you really willing to confess yourself? "

Chi Lie: " I've already said that I really like him, and I wanted to find an opportunity to tell him. Anyway, you don't have to worry about it. "

When my cousin left, she was skeptical and did not clearly agree whether to continue to help him keep it secret.

Chi Lie was afraid that Teacher Tang might fall asleep again, so he walked back quickly.

In fact, he didn't intend to hide the truth from Teacher Tang for too long. He also wanted to take Teacher Tang and him back to the capital and accompany him to college. After all, he had to be honest about the truth.

But all this will have to wait until he catches up with the person.

Teacher Tang has a good temper, and he is confident that he can make Teacher Tang forgive him. Everything should be done step by step, and he has made arrangements, so there is no need for others to interfere.

His cousin was always busy and probably didn't have the time to keep an eye on him, so he didn't take it to heart.

When I returned to the room, Teacher Tang had just finished taking a shower and was blowing her hair in front of the mirror in her hotel bathrobe.

He walked over, snatched the hair dryer from Teacher Tang's hand with his right hand, and put his left hand through Teacher Tang's hair. The slightly longer hair swayed in front of his eyes.

Teacher Tang squinted her eyes and avoided him, like a sleepy little rabbit.

The hot air from the hair dryer was very abrupt in the air-conditioning, making Teacher Tang's cheeks red and drowsy while standing.

The hair was half dried, and he was too lazy to put away the cord. Chi Lie casually placed the hair dryer on the low cabinet nearby, and rushed to the bed with Teacher Tang. The sudden change of position probably woke Teacher Tang up from her sleep. " Hiss ... be gentle, I won't run away. "

Chi Lie keenly sensed something was wrong. The quality of the hotel bed was pretty good, so it shouldn't be painful.

He propped himself up a little, grabbed Teacher Tang's bathrobe belt and turned her over.

Teacher Tang curled up her legs nervously, exposing the scars on her knees.

When practicing dancing, bumps and bruises are common, it's not a rare thing.

The injury on Tang Shiqi's knee is not a rare one. He bumped into it while practicing dancing today, and there are two round blue marks, which are very common bruises.

Chi Lie treated it as a big deal and lifted up both of Teacher Tang's legs, as gently as possible. He blew on them twice, " I was pressing on you just now, wasn't I? "

Teacher Tang smiled and said, " It's okay. Just do whatever you want to do quickly. I'm so sleepy. " Then he yawned.

But Chi Lie put aside half of his improper thoughts, touched the wound with his thumb with heartache, and then kissed his lips.

He swore that he only felt pain when he kissed her, but Teacher Tang's action made the half-hearted thoughts he had lost return even more.

Perhaps because she thought his kiss was too light and too itchy, Teacher Tang shrank back. He tried to follow her, but Teacher Tang raised her right foot and stepped on his shoulder to stop him.

Teacher Tang smiled with narrowed eyes, " Don't touch my knees, it's weird, I'm very ticklish there. "

There was nothing wrong with Teacher Tang's expression, just like a child playing with his friends, but his left leg was bent with his heel against his thigh, his right foot was on his shoulder, and the hem of his bathrobe was completely opened towards him with the movement. The last time they watched a movie, Teacher Tang was shy, so he wrapped her in a quilt, and he could only piece together some aspects of Teacher Tang that he couldn't normally see through the sense of touch.

But now, Teacher Tang was still smiling unconsciously, unaware that everything was already in plain sight before him.

Unfortunately, that is too private, and according to Teacher Tang's rules, you are not allowed to touch it now.

He could only stare at it and vent his anger elsewhere.

He held her feet on his shoulders, lifted them up and kissed her ankles. Just like the kiss on her forehead in the elevator, he wanted to kiss her again, but he couldn't help it once he put his mouth to her.

He gently rubbed Teacher Tang's ankle with his teeth, but he couldn't help but sucked it. The sound was so obvious that Teacher Tang shrank back desperately in embarrassment.

Teacher Tang complained: " Why do you kiss me everywhere? It's really weird. "

Chi Lie didn't care and kissed her more and more passionately, from the ankle all the way down, lingering over the calf, extending upwards, and finally biting the thigh hard.

Teacher Tang cried out briefly in pain and said aggrievedly, " Didn't you say I was just going to touch you? You're getting weirder and weirder. Just now you were afraid that I would feel pain, and now you're biting me. "

Chi Lie also felt that he was strange. Maybe he was too possessive of Teacher Tang and wanted to have a monopoly on everything.

How could the floor, walls and bars of the dance studio be in such close contact with Teacher Tang and even hurt her?

This won't work, he has to be closer to Teacher Tang than those instruments, so the honor of leaving a scar can only be reserved for him.

Thinking of this, he copied the previous action equally to Teacher Tang's limbs.

Chapter 53 I made him misunderstand
(superior)

Five days passed quickly, and it was finally time for the official performance. Chi Lie followed Teacher Tang into the backstage and insisted on squeezing into the dressing room to help Teacher Tang put on her performance costume, even though Teacher Tang really didn't need it. Unfortunately, when he squeezed in, he was seen by his cousin again.

He had no choice but to shout: "What's wrong, Teacher Tang? It's inconvenient for all the female parents here. Teacher Tang, let me help you. "

After he said this, his behavior became more rational, and Teacher Tang relaxed a lot. He stopped refusing and let him in obediently.

He pressed Teacher Tang's shoulders, asked him to sit on the changing stool, and squatted down to take off Teacher Tang's shoes.

Teacher Tang's usual clothes are very simple, various white shirts with jeans, and simple and clean canvas shoes.

He once asked Teacher Tang why he had so many identical white shirts in his wardrobe.

Teacher Tang actually glared at him and carefully explained the uniqueness of each shirt, asking him to respect them.

Thinking of this, he moved unconsciously and laughed unconsciously.

Tang Shiqi asked cautiously: "You are looking at my feet, what are you laughing at? "

Tang Shiqi's feet are not beautiful in the general sense. Like her hands, they are covered with thick calluses.

But Chi Lie said, "It looks good. " He stretched his neck and pretended to kiss him, which frightened Teacher Tang so much that he quickly retracted his foot and looked at him with strange eyes.

Teacher Tang's acceptance level was neither high nor low. Now that they were outside and his cousin's words were in his mind, Chi Lie finally did not insist and gave a light kiss on the old mark on his ankle.

He held Teacher Tang's ankles and asked him to put his feet on his shoulders. He wanted to change Teacher Tang's pants.

Tang Shiqi felt that this posture was wrong, but he didn't say anything, because Chi Lie would definitely not change his posture, and his words would make him blush and his heart beat fast.

Chi Lie's hands lingered around Tang Shiqi's waist for two circles before unzipping her pants. "

Teacher Tang, you have a really nice waist. "

The waist is also a private area, but Teacher Tang could not feel it. Instead, she explained: "It is the lining of the pants. My mother works in the clothing industry, and most of my clothes are made by her. "

Chi Lie was also distracted by Teacher Tang's words. His mother had never made clothes for him, let alone mended or washed a single piece of clothing for him.

Something in his heart was touched, and he suddenly leaned forward and half-knelt in front of Teacher Tang. He lifted up Teacher Tang's shirt and pressed his cheek against Teacher Tang's soft belly.

Tang Shiqi knew a little about his family, so she didn't stop him from acting like a spoiled brat.

She consoled him, "My family is also from the capital. If I go back someday, I'll let my mother cook for you, too. "

Chi Lie rubbed Teacher Tang's skin and nodded, and then he realized that there was other meaning in these words.

Teacher Tang is based in the county town and has no plans to go home in the near future. Even if he wants to go home, it will be at least a month later.

By then their promise had long passed.

He had expressed more than once that he did not want just one month, but Teacher Tang always refused. Now, Teacher Tang was also secretly expressing his expectations for the future. He was afraid that Teacher Tang would be embarrassed and say something sarcastic, so he didn't point it out and just unbuttoned his shirt little by little.

He was still kneeling on the ground, and after he lifted up Teacher Tang's clothes, a large area of skin suddenly appeared in front of him. Last night, he was too focused on demanding Teacher Tang's legs, but he ignored such a precious place, and immediately leaned in and kissed her, the sound was very obvious.

Teacher Tang's skin slowly turned pink from the place where she was kissed, and she quietly requested, " Aren't you going to help me change my clothes? Hurry up, two people are slower than me alone. "

Chi Lie put his two big hands directly on Teacher Tang's ribs, tracing back and forth, " How can I come in just to change clothes? Shouldn't Teacher Tang be prepared when he lets me in? "

He got addicted again, tilted his head and kissed her belly button, " It's been so long, don't tell me, you don't know what I want to do. "

Teacher Tang said nothing and went to get the performance costume next to her with a red face. Although there was still plenty of time, it would still be suspicious to stay in here for too long.

In fact, he had always kept what Yaya's mother said in his heart, but when he saw Chi Lie, his heart softened and his body became addicted to it, so he couldn't make a decisive refusal.

He once hated his own contradictions and indecision, thinking that no one would like such an awkward personality, but Chi Lie liked it.

Chi Lie never disliked him for these things. Instead, he said, "Do whatever you want to do. If you don't know what to do, just follow me."

As he thought about it, he felt sweet in his heart. He put down his performance clothes, and on a whim, he held Chi Lie's cheek and kissed him on his eyelids.

He kind of liked Chi Lie's eyes. The focus, desire, and emotion in those eyes were all very strong and were only directed at him.

Chi Lie was flattered, and his eyes staring at the performance clothes were no longer full of resentment. He really started to help Tang Shiqi put on the clothes , just like playing with his own doll.

Teacher Tang has been more proactive and obedient recently. Except for the principle of not kissing on the mouth, he can satisfy almost everything.

Apart from the fact that Teacher Tang always met with strange men in secret and his cousin always came over to spoil the fun, he was still very happy during these five days.

Normally in the county town, Teacher Tang would share some of his energy with Jiang Zhi when he returned home. Now, Teacher Tang's energy after work is all on himself.

Unconsciously, he started humming a song.

Teacher Tang followed his movements and was also quite happy because of him. " Do you like dressing people? "

Chi Lie didn't understand the logic, " What? "

Teacher Tang explained, " You wanted to dress me in women's clothes that time, and I'm very happy to dress me in women's clothes today. "

Chi Lie understood now, and he hugged Teacher Tang from the front while he zipped up his back, their noses almost touching.

Chi Lie: " No, I just like to play with you, touch you, and kiss you. Today you kissed me, and I am even happier. "

Tang Shiqi blinked twice, as if he finally realized his own slowness .

Chi Lie thought that Teacher Tang would blush and be speechless again, but he didn't expect that Teacher Tang would look straight at him, " You always have a stern face, I think you should be happy. " After that, she stood on tiptoe and raised her head, and kissed Chi Lie on the chin, without any sound, gently and softly, which was Teacher Tang's usual style.

When Teacher Tang was about to leave, he used his body to stop her, " Teacher Tang, what do you want to tell me after the performance? "

Are you going to agree to my pursuit?

Chi Lie really wanted to ask, but he felt inexplicably nervous and always felt that things would not go as he wished, so he held it back.

Tang Shiqi: " Wait a minute. It won't make sense if I say it now. "

Teacher Tang dodged and left, leaving Chi Lie alone with his heart pounding.

Chi Lie felt his face getting hot, as if he had turned into Teacher Tang, innocent and pure.

(Down)

Although Chi Lie had met Teacher Tang many times and practiced and rehearsed with him, this was his first official performance.

Teacher Tang's performance was in the sixth segment, and he was afraid of missing anything, so he sat in the audience from the beginning.

After waiting for nearly forty minutes, he was about to regret not staying backstage with Teacher Tang for a while longer when he finally saw the figure he had been waiting for.

Teacher Tang walked lightly. After he stepped onto the stage, the spotlight made him shine. The reflective metal pieces on his clothes were dotted like people in an oil painting.

Gradually, he was drawn into Teacher Tang's emotions and gradually entered into the story.

He doesn't understand dancing, but their emotions are mutual, especially since he and Teacher Tang have a close relationship, so he can receive the emotions more accurately.

During rehearsal, the dance was brisk, and when accompanied by the children's dance, it sounded like the dance of woodland elves.

But today he always felt something was wrong. He inexplicably felt that what Teacher Tang conveyed was different from before.

Obviously the movements are standard and there is nothing wrong with the expression ... Eyes.

Expressions and movements can be controlled artificially, but eyes are not so easy and will always reveal themselves at certain moments, such as when looking at him.

The moment they looked at each other, he was delighted. His heart was beating with joy as he was secretly looking at the person in the center of the stage among thousands of people.

But the expected shyness or gentleness of Teacher Tang did not appear.

Teacher Tang just glanced at him indifferently, and then lowered his eyelids. For some reason, he always felt that there was disappointment in her eyes.

Why?

In fact, he had been feeling nervous since early this morning. When he was changing Teacher Tang's clothes and when she kissed him, he was happy, but he always felt vaguely uneasy in his heart.

At this moment, this uneasiness reached its peak. He suddenly realized something. He looked around and found that his cousin was not sitting in the pre-arranged guest seats, but at the very edge, as if she had arrived late and it was difficult for her to squeeze in.

He immediately picked up his phone and sent a message to his cousin.

【 CL : Did you say anything to him? 】

He began to regret that he should have stayed backstage with Teacher Tang until the end. He should have kept an eye on Teacher Tang at all times and not let anyone take advantage of her.

[Baby Yaya: I told you, if you don't pay attention and cause trouble to others, I will tell Teacher Tang. I just can't stand it anymore.]

【 CL: I told you, I will tell him myself when the time comes! 】

[Baby Yaya: When is that time? You've had enough fun and come back to the capital, and then you tell them that you're a liar and that you should break up. Is that right?]

[Baby Yaya: Chi Lie, I am your sister. I know what kind of person you are. Teacher Tang is a good person. Please let him go.]

Chi Lie held his breath in his chest, neither letting it go up nor down. He had nothing to say about the self-righteousness of these " parents " .

It was obvious that he and Teacher Tang had made very good progress in the past few days, so he was waiting to hear what Teacher Tang had to say after the performance was officially over.

Now everything is disrupted.

【 CL : I told you I really like him! 】

Chi Lie was too lazy to talk more with his cousin. He held the phone tightly and looked at the stage. He wanted Teacher Tang to look at him again. He didn't know what the use would be, but he just wanted to look at him again, as if that would give him some room for maneuver.

But Teacher Tang no longer looked at him.

On the stage, there was genuine happiness in the children's eyes, but the happiness in Teacher Tang's eyes was so stiff. Others could not see it, but he could see it.

After much confusion, he sent a message to his cousin again, asking her what she had said specifically.

【Baby Yaya: Emmmm... Did I mean well but end up doing something bad?】

[Baby Yaya: I told you that your family has plenty of money and you have enough living expenses. I was lying to him before.]

[Baby Yaya: I guess you just want to have some fun during the summer vacation, not serious. Don't let him waver on you, a rich young man.]

【Baby Yaya: Oh, he didn't believe it at first and kept insisting that I wasn't that kind of person. So I showed him our transfer records and he stopped talking.】

Chi Lie didn't reply during this time. He didn't know what to say. For the first time, he felt an extremely strong sense of helplessness. Teacher Tang's ex was just "playing" with him by making a bet. Teacher Tang must hate such a person who doesn't take relationships seriously.

Teacher Tang is so soft-hearted, how could she stand this happening a second time? He felt so sorry for Teacher Tang. Even after being told this, she still had to go on stage and perform happily.

This misunderstanding is getting more and more hurtful. He wants to explain it to Teacher Tang as soon as possible, but will Teacher Tang still believe him? When all his pity turns into deception, will Teacher Tang still be soft-hearted towards him?

He didn't dare to think about it.

He wanted to continue hugging Teacher Tang to sleep, he wanted to be able to hold hands and kiss her by lowering his head, he wanted Teacher Tang to sit obediently in his arms and let him do whatever he wanted, but all these seemed to be far away from him.

Impossible, he could not allow such a thing to happen. He had to find Teacher Tang and explain everything as soon as possible.

If the first explanation is not clear, he will try it a second time. If the second explanation doesn't work, he will try it a third time. Anyway, he will never let Teacher Tang go.

He looked up and realized that he had been in a daze for too long and that someone else had already taken the stage.

He grabbed his phone, bent over and left the audience, and ran backstage. When he opened the door, parents were helping their children remove their makeup. He looked around two or three times, but didn't see Teacher Tang, and she wasn't in the dressing room either.

He caught a glimpse of his cousin coming in, and rushed over to ask, "Where are they?" "My cousin's eyes flickered a little, and she rarely looked so arrogant." She just ... left with a man and asked me to help him look after this."

Seeing him panic, the cousin tried to make amends, "It's not a big deal. If I said something wrong, just tell him again that it's right ... and it will be fine, right?"

He found it ridiculous; this was a huge problem for him and it definitely wasn't something that could be solved with just a few words.

He finally remembered to send a WeChat message to Teacher Tang, but the message he sent had a red exclamation mark.

Teacher Tang has deleted him.

The clues were completely cut off, they were not familiar with S City, and he didn't know where Teacher Tang had returned to.

That man was probably Liu Dingcheng. Teacher Tang said they still had a farewell dinner to eat. That man looked well-off, and the place where they were eating should be good, too.

He started to run outside, searching for nearby restaurants on his phone, but this was a bustling area in S City, filled with famous restaurants.

He was unfamiliar with the place and could not enter some restaurants without a reservation. He could not find the ones he could enter and it was impossible for him to ask for the information of the guests in the private rooms.

He checked Teacher Tang's WeChat ID, but it was just a string of letters, not a phone number. He had no way of contacting her.

After searching aimlessly outside for an unknown amount of time, he finally realized that he had no choice but to go back to the hotel and wait. If Teacher Tang didn't come back tonight, there was nothing he could do.

Wait, what if Teacher Tang really doesn't come back tonight? Did she leave with Liu Dingcheng to avoid him?

He was 100% sure that Liu Dingcheng had ulterior motives towards Teacher Tang. Although it was true that Teacher Tang was a straight man, under his influence, some things became not unacceptable.

The more he thought about it, the more scared he became. He was afraid that he was replaceable, and he was afraid that Teacher Tang would also be coaxed into doing something by Liu Dingcheng.

As he was thinking, he had already returned to the hotel, the lobby, the elevator, and the corridor.

At the door of the room, he saw two familiar figures, behaving intimately.

Chapter 54 I was angry with him, I didn't want to

54

Liu Dingcheng pressed Teacher Tang against the door panel. The two of them were very close to each other. The light in the corridor was a little dim, and the shadow cast by Liu Dingcheng on Teacher Tang made it difficult to distinguish their conditions with the naked eye.

But Chi Lie was overthinking too much.

He was worried in his mind that Teacher Tang was with another man, so he didn't see Teacher Tang's rejection, and couldn't tell the true situation of the two people in front of him. The first thought in his mind was that they were kissing.

According to Mr. Tang's principle, only lovers can kiss, and he is not allowed to kiss. But why can Liu Dingcheng kiss?

The doubts in his mind suddenly connected a thread.

Why is it so weird that Teacher Tang's last relationship was given the role of the ex to a woman? Why does Teacher Tang dislike Liu Dingcheng so openly? Why is the atmosphere between Teacher Tang and Liu Dingcheng so weird?

Because Mr. Tang is not a straight man at all, and Liu Dingcheng is his ex, that's why "LDC" appears on Mr. Tang's graffiti wall with a cross.

He automatically ignored the farewell dinner and only thought about what Teacher Tang said, that he and Liu Dingcheng had talked about their conflict.

Are they going to get back together? No, absolutely not.

Chi Lie took two steps at a time, swung his fist and hit Liu Dingcheng on the side of the head, knocking Liu Dingcheng to the ground immediately.

He tilted his head to look at Teacher Tang, his lips were rosy and his eyes were slightly rosy . Tang Shiqi would be like this whenever she drank, but Chi Lie didn't know that. He thought Teacher Tang was passionately kissing Liu Dingcheng, and for a moment he felt as if his heart was being crushed.

Liu Dingcheng struggled to stand up. Chi Lie thought they would at least have a fight here, but unexpectedly, Liu Dingcheng just glanced at him and ran away.

There was a brief silence as he tried to calm his breathing and the anger in his eyes, but he couldn't. Why could that man get the kiss he had been asking for for so long?

That man was obviously thin and hypocritical, how could he compare to him? Why did Mr. Ertang say that he was a straight man, was it to reject him?

He thought that Teacher Tang was going to accept his pursuit, so what she was going to say after the performance was not this, but to tell him that he was going to get back together with his ex-boyfriend and break up with him from now on?

His mind was in a mess, his logic and rationality had all been lost, he was stuck in a dead end and thought Teacher Tang was a heartless man.

He clenched his fists tightly and looked at Teacher Tang angrily, " Teacher Tang, what's going on? Didn't you say you are a straight man? "

He was choking up a little as he spoke, and it was not very obvious. " Then why was he able to kiss you? He is your ex, right? How many times have you kissed? "

As he spoke, he became the one who pressed Teacher Tang against the door panel, " Tang Shiqi, speak. "

There was no response. Tang Shiqi was too lazy to explain anything. He no longer wanted to continue with Chi Lie. He just misunderstood him as a bad person.

What he hated the most were rich kids who treated people as playthings. When he thought about how his love was once again wasted, he was left with only disappointment and decided to break up.

During the long silence, Chi Lie kept staring at Tang Shiqi's lips, which were rosy and sparkling, but they were not made by him.

As long as Tang Shiqi said a word to him, or even touched his hand, he could calm down.

But Tang Shiqi did not respond.

Tang Shiqi's gaze drifted away empty, and the smile that was always on her face was gone.

His anger, which had nowhere to vent, continued to grow stronger and stronger, and Teacher Tang's lips became more and more glaring.

He took out the room card to open the door, pushed Teacher Tang in, kicked the door shut, held Teacher Tang's neck with his palms, and walked to the bathroom, picking up the unopened bottle of mineral water on the table.

He pushed Teacher Tang to the bathroom sink and stuffed a bottle of mineral water into Teacher Tang's hand . " Rinse your mouth. "

Tang Shiqi stood motionless in front of the sink with his eyes downcast. He had just accidentally bumped his wrist against the edge of the sink, and the pain was slowly spreading. He felt so wronged.

He did not kiss Liu Dingcheng, he avoided it, but he did not want to tell Chi Lie. It was obviously Chi Lie who lied first, why should he be obedient and show weakness.

He couldn't forget Chi Lie's kindness for a while, and he missed the intimacy that made him happy. That was what he longed for.

But Chi Lie is so fierce now. Yaya's mother is right. Chi Lie was just playing with him. Now he has had enough, or he feels that someone else has touched his toy and he doesn't want it anymore, so his true colors are revealed and he is so fierce.

But he didn't know that Chi Lie was also feeling aggrieved. Chi Lie didn't feel that his toy was being touched, he felt that his wife was cheating on him!

Chi Lie repeated his request, " Rinse your mouth. "

Teacher Tang remained indifferent.

Under the bathroom light, Teacher Tang's lips looked even brighter . Chi Lie's anger and jealousy mixed together, and he could hardly control his temper.

His temper has always had to be suppressed by Teacher Tang. When Teacher Tang ignored him, he suddenly could not do anything.

He walked forward, pinched Teacher Tang's chin to force him to open his mouth, and fed him water.

Water overflowed from Teacher Tang's mouth, and Chi Lie didn't use enough force to soak a large area of his shirt. But Teacher Tang didn't do anything else, just like a puppet, letting him worry alone.

He really didn't know what to do. In fact, he didn't mind Teacher Tang's past relationship experience, but he secretly treated the current Teacher Tang as his boyfriend and wife, and he couldn't bear to see the current Teacher Tang kissing others.

The entire bottle of water was wasted, most of it spilled in front of Teacher Tang. The bottle of mineral water fell to the ground. He hugged Teacher Tang weakly, the sob in his voice surpassing the anger, " Rinse your mouth, please, Teacher Tang, please ..."

There was really no other way, so he took the towel at hand, wet it and wiped Teacher Tang's mouth with it, then wiped it dry with a dry tissue.

He turned Teacher Tang over to face him and slowly moved closer. It didn't matter, it didn't matter. Just forget the old kiss. He wanted to occupy Teacher Tang's lips with a new kiss.

Teacher Tang finally responded, raising her hand to press against his shoulder, refusing him to approach.

This rejection stirred up his anger, which had finally dissipated.

That man knew Teacher Tang earlier than him, held Teacher Tang's hand earlier than him, and hugged Teacher Tang's waist earlier than him, and even after he " possessed " Teacher Tang, he was the first to kiss her.

His patience was worn out by Teacher Tang's silence, and he choked up as he asked, " Stop saying you're straight. I saw you kissing a man, and that man could do it, so why can't I? "

He grabbed Teacher Tang's shoulders and locked him into the corner. Although he had a tough attitude, he only dared to bury his face in Teacher Tang's shoulders and neck, hiding his moist eyes.

Chi Lie: " You speak, why can't I? How am I worse than him? "

His mind was in a mess because of the picture of the two people " kissing " . All kinds of emotions mixed together, exceeding the limit of being too demanding. He did something wrong and began to forcefully ask for a kiss.

He grabbed both of Teacher Tang's hands with one hand, lifted them up and locked them on the wall above her head. With his other hand, he went around Teacher Tang's waist, locked her in his arms, and kissed her directly.

Teacher Tang struggled violently and started kicking him. This was different from her usual pretense of resistance. Teacher Tang really wanted to kill him.

He stopped in pain but didn't let go. " Why can't I? Tang Shiqi, why don't you like me? "

His eyes were red, but Teacher Tang didn't even look at him, just kept pushing him away.

It was not until today that he realized that Teacher Tang was quite strong, and his cold face had nothing to do with gentleness.

He was inexplicably afraid, and his fear was magnified infinitely in the silence, as if if he couldn't keep Teacher Tang today, he would never be able to keep him.

His head was already dizzy, and he had long forgotten that he came to Teacher Tang to explain. Seeing Teacher Tang remain silent, he was pushed to an extreme.

There was only one thought left in his confused brain: he had to keep Teacher Tang no matter what, so he lied again.

Chi Lie: " Teacher Tang, I took a picture when you were kissing. "

Tang Shiqi's eyes widened in an instant. He did not kiss Liu Dingcheng, but there must be something wrong with the angle of the photo. Chi Lie was so sure that they kissed, so the photo must be of them kissing.

Chi Lie was very satisfied with Teacher Tang's appearance. " Be obedient, or I will send the photos out. They said that homosexuality cannot be taught to children. "

As he spoke, his hand had already reached for Teacher Tang's waistband.

Chapter 55 How to Coax Him

58

Chi Lie released his grip on Teacher Tang's hands, freed his hands, held one hand on her waist, and placed the other hand on Teacher Tang's lips, squeezing and grinding them, which were soft and temptingly red.

Teacher Tang looked at him with eyes full of grievance, but he could no longer care about that.

Teacher Tang's pitiful expression only fueled his desire.

He pinched Teacher Tang's chin again and kissed her hard.

Their kiss did not progress from lips touching to tongues entwining. It was a fierce suppression from the beginning. Teacher Tang did not respond or resist, and was completely bullied by him.

He left marks on every part of Teacher Tang's mouth, and at the end he bit Teacher Tang's lower lip, unwilling to separate.

He wanted to use the "photo" to get something more, and when he opened his eyelids from the deep kiss, he was stunned by the tears hanging on Teacher Tang's cheeks and eyelashes. All his emotions dropped to 0 at once. His hands and feet became flustered. He held Teacher Tang's face and said, "What's wrong? Don't cry. What's wrong?"

He wiped Teacher Tang's tears, and Teacher Tang turned her head away to avoid him, but this time he didn't dare to threaten her at all.

There was no other choice, so he had to hold Teacher Tang's legs, pick her up face to face, and walk towards the bedroom.

He got on the bed, let Teacher Tang sit in his arms, stretched out the quilt and wrapped her up, always feeling that this would make her feel more secure.

He rubbed Teacher Tang's back, "Don't cry, don't cry, I was wrong."

But he felt sorry for himself, "Do you really not like me kissing you? Why is it that Liu Dingcheng is fine ..."

Teacher Tang tried hard to control her sobs and said from the bottom of her heart: "I hate you." These four words have no deterrent power, but Chi Lie knows Tang Shiqi, and this is probably the most serious thing Tang Shiqi can say.

His heart tightened, and he clutched the fabric around Teacher Tang's waist. "I was wrong. I won't do this again in the future—"

Teacher Tang interrupted someone for once, "There's no future, you liar."

Chi Lie was stunned for a moment, then he remembered that there was a misunderstanding between them caused by his cousin. The intimate scenes of Teacher Tang and others were so shocking that he was unable to think straight.

He quickly explained, "Teacher Tang, don't listen to my cousin. Believe me, I don't want to play with you. I really like you. I also want you to accompany me back to the capital. I have calculated how much money I need to pay and what kind of house I want to rent for you. I even saved the decoration styles in my phone for you to choose from."

As he spoke, he began to stretch out his arm to touch his phone. He showed Tang Shiqi his estimated college entrance examination scores, the schools he wanted to apply for, which houses were convenient for each school, the prices, and the bus stops.

"There is a university in the county. If you really don't want to go with me, I will stay with you. The house here ..."

He became more excited and talked incessantly. He felt that Teacher Tang had not agreed to his request yet, so saying all this was just putting pressure on people.

Now, it has become a proof of his sincerity.

He raised his eyes cautiously and saw that Teacher Tang's expression was no longer as cold and hard as it was at the beginning, so he continued speaking.

Chi Lie: "I have never been a person with high moral standards. I wanted to live with you, so I asked my cousin to help me lie. I wanted you to be close to me. I deliberately ignored the injuries before so that they would heal slowly. I can't remember anything else, but I swear I definitely didn't mean to play a trick on you!"

They were still sitting in the hugging position. Chi Lie hugged Teacher Tang's waist tightly and looked up to confess, " This is the first time I really like someone. It's also the first time I pursued someone. I was in a hurry and went astray. I used the wrong method. "

He continued: " Maybe you think I lied to you a lot and played you for a fool, but that's not the case. Everything I did was because I wanted to be with you. I don't believe you can't feel that I like you. "

He said a lot, but Teacher Tang only responded with one sentence, " Delete the photos. "

Chi Lie didn't take any photos, but he didn't want to delete them either. " If I delete them, you'll run away. If I don't, you know I'm a scoundrel anyway. "

Teacher Tang's chest heaved with anger. He clenched his fist and punched him, this time using real strength. Chi Lie also cried out in pain.

Tang Shiqi: " I hate it most when people lie to me. What else do you want to say? I don't believe you can't remember it. "

Chi Lie recalled and was unwilling to loosen the strength in his hands. He was always afraid that Teacher Tang would leave without saying a word again. He didn't want to experience the anxiety of looking for someone on the street just now a second time.

Thinking about what he wanted to confess, he pressed Teacher Tang even tighter.

Chi Lie, " Once when the parents were called, Jiang Zhi and I had a fight. I said I wrote "I like you" on the test paper. Do you remember that time? "

Teacher Tang hummed in agreement, as if he was too lazy to pay attention to him.

He really couldn't stand this kind of indifference. The marshmallow that was melting in his mouth suddenly froze into the ice cream that it was when he first met him.

He pressed his lips against Teacher Tang's neck and muttered, " I didn't write on the test paper. I drew an imaginary you, naked, with legs spread, sweating-- "

" Shut up! " Tang Shiqi said. With Chi Lie in this position, he couldn't cover anyone's mouth.

He continued to ask, " Anything else? Tell me everything. No need to go into so much detail. "

Chi Lie raised his head and stepped back a little, and saw that Teacher Tang's face had turned slightly red and his expression had softened a lot, as if he had found a way to coax her.

He was always shameless. " I've masturbated in the bathroom many times, always in the general area where you were, thinking about your face. "

When you talk, I stare at your tongue sliding in your mouth.

Every time you rub your legs, I watch you, and in the end I always secretly take a cold shower.

Whenever I wake up at night, I will hold you in my arms.

I often secretly smell your pillow, quilt, clothes, and even the private clothes you didn't have time to take out after taking a shower.

When I watch you dancing, I can't appreciate anything related to art. I can only think about how it feels to press you down with this posture.

And so on and so forth. He poured out all the dirty thoughts in his mind to Tang Shiqi, and Tang Shiqi's entire face turned as red as the corners of his eyes.

Teacher Tang also noticed his own strangeness. When Chi Lie talked about his future plans, he was slightly shaken but still half-believing and half-doubting.

But when Chi Lie said these dirty words to him, he could feel the strong affection from them. The burning fire in Chi Lie's eyes and the shameful touch under his thighs made him believe it. He liked the obsession in Chi Lie's eyes, he liked Chi Lie.

Chapter 56 His Depths

56

Chi Lie's fingers slowly traced the depression of Teacher Tang's back, and his mouth had already moved from the neck to the corners of the mouth. Of course, this was also thanks to Teacher Tang's indulgence.

As he spoke, he secretly moved his lips towards Teacher Tang, " So are we reconciled? " Tang Shiqi knew what he was thinking, but she didn't turn her head away. " If you delete the photos, we'll be reconciled. "

Chi Lie thought for a moment and said with a smile: " Then let's not make peace yet. Can you let me threaten you again? "

Tang Shiqi sighed deeply and said helplessly: " What kind of rogue are you trying to be? "

Chi Lie's hand slid down Teacher Tang's back to the waist of his pants. " I want to ask Teacher Tang, what do you want to say to me after the performance? "

Tang Shiqi suddenly became depressed and leaned on Chi Lie's shoulder. " I wanted to ask you something. During the performance today, you were staring at your phone in a daze. "

Teacher Tang lowered her voice for the last sentence, " I was just suspicious at the time, but when you didn't even look at me, I thought you really didn't like me ..."

Chi Lie straightened up all of a sudden, " And then you ran off with that weird guy?! "

Teacher Tang hit him hard on the back, " Say something nonsense again. And ... I didn't kiss him, I dodged it, your eyes are not good! You must have seen it wrong and you hit me. "

Chi Lie felt even more wronged, " How did I hit you? "

Teacher Tang raised his wrist in front of him and said, " It hit the sink. "

He lowered his eyes to look. He might have hit his wrist bone. There was a small horizontal red streak that was slowly spreading. It would probably turn into purple tomorrow.

Teacher Tang has fair skin, which would look good with any color. He looked at her, swallowed his saliva, and kissed her fiercely. He circled the tip of his tongue against her wrist bone and took a deep sip.

The wrist bone was covered with a layer of crystal, and it became even redder due to his torture. After all, he still felt sorry for Teacher Tang, so there was a circle of teeth marks on it. He looked up and asked Teacher Tang, " Does it still hurt? "

Tang Shiqi shrank back. He was originally in pain, but now he was only left with numbness all the way down to his heart. This was too embarrassing, and he dared not say it.

Moreover, he could see that Chi Lie's eyes were clearly fixed on his lips. Chi Lie kissed the wrist bone, but he was thinking about his mouth.

He had to explain again, " I really didn't kiss him, you don't have to kiss me all the time. "

Chi Lie grinned and said, " Don't always mention other men, I just want to kiss you. " After saying that, he moved his palm to the back of Teacher Tang's head and pressed it down to kiss her.

After they broke the kiss ring, they could no longer resist Chi Lie's addiction.

He kissed Teacher Tang until she was out of breath, and after letting her go for a short while, he still kissed her lips and spoke, " Teacher Tang, you said that only lovers can kiss, so what are we now? "

Tang Shiqi was too embarrassed to speak, " I ..."

They were too close. Every time he said a word or moved his lips, he would kiss Chi Lie. When he wanted to speak and took a step back, Chi Lie caught up with him.

He made up his mind, closed his eyes and compromised, " I keep my word. " I said only lovers can kiss, so if we kiss, we will be lovers.

Chi Lie narrowed his eyes and enjoyed the soft touch and fit of his lips. He thought that on the day when Teacher Tang promised him, he would cheer for joy and would want to run around the hotel three times.

But when that day came, he realized that it was not the case.

Greed is always in his nature, and his inner joy drives him to ask for more.

Chi Lie: " So after the performance, what do you want to tell me? "

Silence again.

But Chi Lie's patience had been coaxed back, and he quietly enjoyed the sound of Teacher Tang's heartbeat and the rising temperature in the silence.

Tang Shiqi lowered her voice, as if afraid that others might hear her, even though there was no one else in the room. " I was planning to tell you about Liu Dingcheng, but I was afraid that you would blame me for lying to you, so I prepared something ... but now I don't need it. You lied to me first, so you have to forgive me. "

Chi Lie didn't care, turned around, leaned over and pushed Tang Shiqi to the head of the bed.

Tang Shiqi was caught off guard and tightened his waist.

He pressed his hand against Teacher Tang's forehead and asked, " What have you prepared? "

Tang Shiqi's eyes wandered, " Nothing ... it's quite late, let's go to bed. "

Chi Lie pressed him even tighter, " Listen, what have you prepared for me? "

Tang Shiqi felt the heat in Chi Lie's lower abdomen, and was a little afraid to say, " I'm tired today, can you let me rest first? "

Chi Lie lowered his head and traced the side lines of Tang Shiqi's neck with the tip of his nose.

He said pitifully, " If you don't tell me, I will have to send the photos to your parents' group. "

Tang Shiqi finally realized that she was so busy being with Chi Lie that she forgot about this important matter. " ... I, then you can delete it after I tell you, okay? "

Chi Lie bargained, " Tomorrow, I will delete it early tomorrow morning. Tonight, you have to listen to me. "

The atmosphere was so good tonight that he was unwilling to just stop at kissing. He still remembered what Teacher Tang had said, that kissing and making love were things that only lovers could do and must do.

He also wanted the latter.

Teacher Tang's "preparation" also gave him endless reverie.

Tang Shiqi had been burned by the heat for most of the day, so how could he not know what Chi Lie was thinking? Sometimes he felt that he and Chi Lie were actually on par with each other, and the bad factors always grew in front of each other.

He realized today that he seemed to really like seeing Chi Lie being attracted to him, and all of Chi Lie's advances came from the desire hidden deep in his heart.

He didn't dare to say or do anything, but Chi Lie helped him force it out.

He nervously rubbed Chi Lie's lower back with his heel, "Didn't you ask me the other day ... whether male teachers could wear female performance skirts? I brought them here."

Chi Lie's breathing suddenly became heavy. He reached his hands directly into Teacher Tang's shirt, supported her waist and moved it upwards, tracing Teacher Tang's ribs.

He stared into Teacher Tang's eyes and said, "Can the male teacher just wear a skirt for me?" He emphasized the word "just".

Teacher Tang stared at the red face, her voice barely audible, "... Okay."

*

The next day, the flight was scheduled for the afternoon. Chi Lie had foresight to set the alarm at 10:00 yesterday. When the shrill alarm rang, he turned it off in a daze, turned over and hugged the person beside him tightly.

For many days, he wanted to do this when he woke up in the morning, and today he finally realized it.

Tang Shiqi was also awakened by his strangling embrace, and the first thing she said in a daze was, "Delete the photos."

He was quite threatened by that photo last night.

He was coaxed into posing in all kinds of unbearable positions, revealing all kinds of shameful names and sounds. Fortunately, he was flexible, so except for a little soreness in his waist, his thighs were not too painful.

Chi Lie was so annoyed that he finally told Teacher Tang the truth, "I didn't take any photos at all. I was so angry that I didn't have the energy to take out my phone to take photos."

Tang Shiqi thought about this for a few times in the daze of waking up in the morning, and suddenly opened his eyes wide, "You promised not to lie anymore."

Chi Lie moved his palm down and kneaded it, "Let's start from this morning. You made me so sad yesterday, how can I still care about it?"

Tang Shiqi was speechless: "I don't see you looking sad at all."

Chi Lie denied it, and said with a hint of meaning, "How can I not be sad? I cried all over my body, and all my tears went into Teacher Tang."

Tang Shiqi's eyes suddenly widened even more, and she bent her knees to try to push the little hooligan away, but the little hooligan held her knees apart and pinned her down, wasting the last two hours of the morning.

The author has something to say:

Understand, don't open

Chapter 57 Going Home with Him

60

A few hours later, the plane landed, and by the time I got home from the airport, it was already dark.

Yaya fell asleep in her cousin's arms. Before entering the house, her cousin apologized to Teacher Tang and said that she had caused trouble for her, but without waiting for Teacher Tang to respond, she went into her home.

Teacher Tang smiled, didn't care too much, and took Chi Lie into the house.

As soon as I took a step inside, I heard Jiang Zhi howling like a ghost, saying that he was lonely, cold, and had trouble eating and sleeping, and was very anxious .

After asking, I found out that the results will be released after 12 o'clock today. I have been busy with performances and quarrels these days and forgot about the important things for a while.

Chi Lie didn't care too much. He touched Teacher Tang's hair and tapped the back of her neck, waiting for Teacher Tang to wash up and go to bed.

Teacher Tang's physical acceptance was pretty good, but her mental acceptance was not so good. She started crying and couldn't take it anymore after just three times last night. However, judging from Teacher Tang's physical reaction, it was clear that she was still not satisfied.

Maybe he didn't feel safe outside, so when he got home this time, he was thinking about how to broaden Teacher Tang's psychological acceptance.

They didn't remember the time when the results were released, but someone would always remember. As soon as they entered the bedroom, before Chi Lie had time to stretch out his arms to hug Teacher Tang, his cell phone rang.

Display: Mom.

Teacher Tang also saw it and tried to avoid him immediately, but he was grabbed by the waist and dragged back.

He hugged Teacher Tang from behind, resting his chin on her shoulder when answering the phone. Teacher Tang could hear everything that was said on the phone.

" Baby, mom will pick you up tomorrow. Your dad has hired a teacher to help you apply for the college entrance exam. "

Chi Lie pushed Teacher Tang towards the bed and replied, " No need, I can calculate it myself. "

The voice of the person on the other end was very cautious. " Baby, no matter where you apply, you should discuss it with mom and dad. After all, this is such a big deal, right? "

Chi Lie's attitude did not change. " I will take responsibility for myself. It's quite late. You should go to bed early. "

As they were talking, the two of them had already walked to the bed. Chi Lie sat down and pulled Teacher Tang to sit on his legs. Because the person on the other end of the phone was his mother, Teacher Tang didn't dare to make a sound and obediently let him do what he wanted.

His mother was expressing her wish for him to go home, but he was absent-minded here, pulling out the hem of Teacher Tang's shirt and using his own hand to fill in the gap.

The call lasted for more than twenty minutes. Teacher Tang lay in his arms, biting the fabric on his shoulders and breathing quietly and steadily until.

" Baby, Mommy went to get counseling recently. Your cousin recommended it to me. " Chi Lie paused, took out his hand and placed it on Teacher Tang's back to calm him down, and asked, " What kind of psychological counseling? "

The mother was a little hesitant, " I'm just ... counseling parents with homosexual children. I'm trying to accept it. Can you come home to see me? "

Chi Lie's mind went blank for a moment. He had never thought that his mother would do this. On the other end of the phone, " Also, my psychology teacher also taught me that you have grown up and I need to respect your ideas on some matters. "

Chi Lie didn't say anything. He slowly hugged Teacher Tang in his arms and rubbed him. Then he dared to ask, " Where's Dad? "

The voice on the other end of the phone was surprised, " I did persuade him! I took him to do basic tutoring, but he later stopped going. He said those were all fallacies, but in fact he realized that you were not wrong, but ... it takes time to accept ..."

Mom asked cautiously: " Then ... can I pick you up tomorrow? "

He couldn't bear to refuse his mother's words, but he couldn't bear to separate from his new wife even more.

He was struggling, and unconsciously glanced at Tang Shiqi, and saw Teacher Tang open her lips and mouthed to him, " I'll go with you. "

He was extremely surprised, agreed to his mother's request, hung up the phone, dragged Teacher Tang's legs to the side, threw her on the bed and hugged her tightly, " Are you really going with me? "

Tang Shiqi patted his back, " I came here because of Liu Dingcheng's matter. Now that things with him have come to an end, I also want to go back to see my parents. " It happened that the performance in S City was over and the dance class had a few days off, so he had time to go back.

Chi Lie then remembered that he had not yet settled his account. " How did it end? Don't you still want to kiss you? "

" He was drunk. I've made it clear to him that I like you and I won't like him anymore. " Chi Lie was stunned for a moment, then suddenly kissed Tang Shiqi on the lips several times. He had been hinting at her yesterday but failed to get a straight confession, but now he actually talked it out.

He looked at Teacher Tang's face which was slowly turning red, and guessed that Teacher Tang was just realizing what he had blurted out.

This person is always like this, recruiting people unconsciously, and he himself knows nothing about it, which makes others look dirty.

He listened to Teacher Tang's obvious attempt to change the subject, frowning, " You can drink, but you are not allowed to get drunk, understand? "

It was clearly a restriction on him, but he was very willing and even happy. He kissed Teacher Tang on the cheek, " Okay, I'm a henpecked husband, and I have to listen to whatever my wife says. "

Teacher Tang was tickled by his kiss, and she chuckled while locking her neck, " You just keep talking nonsense. I'm a man, so don't yell. "

" Is it not okay to have a male wife? " Chi Lie said solemnly, " Last night Teacher Tang still called me husband, but now you don't acknowledge me? "

Teacher Tang's expression was blank for a moment, Did " I ... call? "

Chi Lie was not ashamed at all. " I did yell, and you said, 'Hubby, slow down, hubby, I was wrong,' and then I started crying— "

" Shut up! " Tang Shiqi quickly raised his hand to cover Chi Lie's mouth. His memory gradually came back to him. He argued for himself, " You bullied me and forced me to do that. " Chi Lie smiled at Teacher Tang, " I want to bully you again today, is that okay? "

Teacher Tang stopped talking. He could feel the thin neck flesh against his face starting to heat up.

He was about to say some nice words to appease her, but then he heard Teacher Tang say, " Then pay attention to the time. You have to check your scores after 12 o'clock. "

Chi Lie's breathing stagnated. " Why are you so obedient? I don't care about the score. Don't worry about it. " As he said that, he took out the things they bought today from the shopping bag on the bedside.

Teacher Tang stepped on his shoulder to stop him, " I want to see Xiaozhi's score. "

" Don't look. " Teacher Tang's rabbit strength had no effect on him. He grabbed Teacher Tang's thin ankles and moved from her shoulders to her waist. " Don't think about other men when you make love with me. "

" He is my brother, you are unreasonable ..."

But Tang Shiqi likes Chi Lie's unreasonableness because it is full of love and he can see it.

Chapter 58 His Comfort

61

Chi Lie's college entrance examination score was as expected. Although it was not outstanding, it was more than 50 points higher than the first-class score line, and he could go to a good university in the capital. Of course, he would apply to wherever Teacher Tang decided to stay. Jiang Zhi was not so lucky. He was hovering on the edge of the second-tier line. After looking at Chi Lie's score, he was afraid that his brother would look down on him and felt that he had let his brother down for all his hard work over the past few months.

Unexpectedly, his brother was very happy, saying that his test results were about the same as usual, quite good, and he could tell him if he wanted any reward.

The next afternoon, Chi Lie's mother picked him up. Tang Shiqi did not show up and took the high-speed rail later. After all, his mother was still accepting the situation.

Chi Lie returned home and lay on the bed to rest. His arms felt empty. He hugged the quilt tightly unconsciously and reached for his cell phone to call Teacher Tang.

I called, and after more than twenty seconds, Teacher Tang picked up the phone. Her voice was not loud. " Are you home? "

He didn't answer, and tried to speak in a calm tone, " What about you? Why are you answering the phone so late? "

Teacher Tang: " I'm having dinner with my parents and just came out of the private room. "

" Oh. " Chi Lie closed his eyes, feeling Teacher Tang's breathing weakened by the phone call, and blurted out, " I miss you so much. "

He thought Teacher Tang would say he was pretentious and had no future, and that it had only been a few hours and he was being smooth-talking.

Unexpectedly, the person on the other end of the line muttered, " I miss you too ... Wait until I finish my meal, and we can talk on the phone all day, okay? "

Okay, of course, he immediately gave an excited response, his voice suddenly became several degrees hoarse, " Start now, don't hang up. "

In the past, Teacher Tang might not have been able to hear it, but now, Teacher Tang is too familiar with this kind of heavy voice, and probably knows his condition immediately.

The voice on the other end of the phone was already slurred, " I, I still have to have dinner with my parents, you wait until I get home. "

Chi Lie felt that he might not be able to wait, " Teacher Tang, can you wear headphones and eat while on the phone? "

Teacher Tang: " Don't mess with me. It's weird to eat with headphones on. My parents are still here. "

However, the subsequent response could only be his more presumptuous aura.

His brain went blank for a moment, and then he reacted, hearing the sound of Teacher Tang's footsteps and the door closing. As expected, Teacher Tang was very obedient. Although he said no, he finally agreed.

Then next time when we are somewhere else, if Teacher Tang's advice doesn't work, he won't listen.

There were a few unclear voices coming from the other end of the phone, probably from Teacher Tang's parents, but it soon became quiet, leaving only the faint chewing or breathing sounds of Teacher Tang.

He enjoyed Teacher Tang's indulgence and indulged himself in the insignificant noise. He didn't know how long it had been before he heard a voice from the other end of the phone again.

Teacher Tang was talking to the parents, " Have you finished eating? Wait for me ... I 'm going to the toilet. "

After that, there were hurried footsteps and noisy voices . After the last door closed, the noise subsided. He sincerely pleaded, " Tang Shiqi, please talk. Can you come to see me? "

Teacher Tang sighed, " You are so slow, my parents have finished their meal and are leaving ... "

He could no longer understand the meaning of Teacher Tang's words, and could only try his best to move faster with the help from Teacher Tang, while begging, " Can you please say more and coax me ..."

Teacher Tang learned it by herself. Avoiding the people who might be in the toilet, she called Chi Lie's name in a low voice, " Chi Lie ... hurry up. "

Chi Lie still felt it was not enough, " Say more, more. "

There was silence on the other end of the phone for a few seconds. " Should I call you baby? "

Chi Lie:

When he let Teacher Tang listen to his phone call with his mother, he should have known that the name "baby" would definitely be accepted as a joke.

But not now.

He said dissatisfiedly: " You are not asking me to hurry up, you are trying to make me wilt. "

Teacher Tang didn't care at all and chuckled on the other end, as if he couldn't feel the impatience and urgency on his side at all.

Just when he was secretly thinking about how to teach Teacher Tang a lesson the next time they met, Teacher Tang finally showed mercy and rescued him. She called him in a low and soft voice, " Can you call me husband? "

Caught off guard, his ears seemed to feel the temperature of those two words, and it was obviously heating up, and finally it ended.

He buried himself in the pillow to calm himself, and even when he hugged the quilt tightly, he still felt extremely empty. He was just thinking about trying harder, asking Teacher Tang to come to him, or he could go to Teacher Tang, either way would be fine.

In short, he felt that he couldn't stand sleeping alone tonight.

Before he could open his mouth, he suddenly heard someone else's voice coming from Teacher Tang's end, and this voice was not unfamiliar.

Teacher Tang was a little frightened, " Were you here just now? "

Liu Dingcheng's voice was distorted through the receiver, and he couldn't understand his tone. He only heard him say, " That little brat tricked you into doing these immoral things? I really don't feel comfortable handing you over to him. "

Teacher Tang's voice turned cold, just like the first day he met this man in the hotel, " No group sex is immoral. "

Teacher Tang's footsteps rang twice before he was stopped again. Liu Dingcheng's disgusting voice reappeared, " I was too young back then. I won't make the same mistake again now, but he is at the age where he will make mistakes. I know it's impossible for us to be together, but you shouldn't trust him too much. "

After saying this, Liu Dingcheng left. What he said would not have any impact on the actual relationship between the two, but it just made people feel disgusted.

Chi Lie wanted to talk to Liu Dingcheng directly, but they were separated by the phone and headphones and could not express anything.

He could only calm down and be responsible to Teacher Tang, " No age is guaranteed to make mistakes. Mistakes are the person's own fault. Believe me. If you think I am going too far, you can just say it. "

Unexpectedly, Teacher Tang just smiled and said, " Don't listen to him. I've already told you if there is anything I don't want. " The implication was that anything he had not formally refused was a tacit agreement.

Chi Lie recalled that Teacher Tang had once told him seriously that one, he must not gain sympathy by hurting himself, and two, he must not lie to others.

But he was still trying to correct his mistakes, and always seemed to make the same mistake again, and for a while he lost the courage to speak.

Teacher Tang has always been considerate and they really have a tacit understanding. He doesn't need to say much, Teacher Tang can comfort him with everything.

Tang Shiqi: " Chi Lie, there are different types of deception. " After saying this, even Teacher Tang himself found it funny. Rather than saying this, it would be better to say that his bottom line is movable.

Move for Chi Lie.

Tang Shiqi: " If you want to give me a bouquet of flowers, but tell me that you have nothing prepared, it is not called lying, it is called a surprise. "

He continued, " If you fall in love with someone else, even if you haven't done anything to offend me, but you just hide it, it's still called lying. "

Finally, " Anyway, I think I like you so much that I don't even think that what you did was a lie. "

Chi Lie's heart conveyed his emotions instead of words. It seemed that he was chasing after and hugging Teacher Tang, but Teacher Tang's love was never lacking or inadequate.

It seems that he is in a dominant position and is getting more and more demanding every day, but in fact, as long as Teacher Tang says something serious, he will turn into an obedient puppy.

Chi Lie's love is fire and aggression, while Tang Shiqi's love is water and tolerance.

The author has something to say:

Still not open, hehe

Chapter 59 His Position

59

At night, Chi Lie still sneaked out of the house.

He and Tang Shiqi had been on the phone the whole time. Tang Shiqi's original intention was to ease Chi Lie's longing, but unexpectedly, the more they talked on the phone, the more impatient Chi Lie became.

Just now Chi Lie coaxed him to share his location, saying that he wanted to see how far apart they were. Now it was convenient for Chi Lie to come find him.

But he didn't live in his own house, but in his parents' house. Seeing Chi Lie getting closer and closer to him, he lied for the rare time in his life and just said that he wanted to go out with his friends as they hadn't seen each other for a long time.

He was already an adult, and his parents didn't want to interfere with his private life, so he had no choice but to drive to pick up Chi Lie and drive to his house.

It was also the first time that Chi Lie realized that Teacher Tang's family background was not worse than his.

Chi Lie followed Teacher Tang into the room and asked sourly, " Has Liu Dingcheng been here before? "

He heard Teacher Tang laughing, but she took off the spare key and put it in his hand, saying: " But he doesn't have the key. "

He was immediately coaxed into submission, and he closed the door with his hands behind his back. He picked up Teacher Tang before she even returned the shoes.

He was not familiar with the layout, but the sofa in the living room was large and conspicuous, so he just carried Teacher Tang over.

He hugged Teacher Tang and lay on the sofa, but did nothing. He just hugged her tightly and sniffed her deeply, from the temples to the shoulders and neck, and from the shoulders and neck to the chest. Finally, he hid himself in Teacher Tang's shirt, pressed against Teacher Tang's thin belly, and kissed her belly button quietly.

Teacher Tang stroked the back of his head through his clothes, " Are you a baby? Your mother calls you baby, right? "

Teacher Tang's abdomen also had muscles formed by dancing, and at this moment, they were not exerting any force, but were soft. He held Teacher Tang's soft belly in his mouth and rubbed it to vent his dissatisfaction.

Teacher Tang seemed to know that he would not do anything too harsh, and continued to smile, " Then I have to call you baby too. I can't always call you by your full name. Hey! It's itchy! Don't move your hands around. "

Chi Lie stopped as he was told, and didn't say anything stupid like calling him husband. Instead, he seriously suggested, " It seems that we can only call him by his full name. My name is not easy to call with double characters. "

Teacher Tang, who is such a good-tempered person, suddenly became picky, " No, that would be the same as everyone else. "

Chi Lie poked his head out from his clothes and smiled happily, " Then from now on, when people call me by my full name, I won't respond. I'll just let you call me by that. "

Maybe they both discovered that the other person is easy to please. There is no such thing as good temper or bad temper. It all depends on the person.

Chi Lie couldn't get enough of Tang Shiqi, " It's different, you scream better than them. "

Then he went to the trouble to explain, " I said the name. "

Teacher Tang felt that she was always being controlled by Chi Lie, which was too embarrassing, so she simply raised her legs and wrapped them around Chi Lie's waist, " I thought you had to look for me so late because you wanted to hear me call you something else. "

Saying this probably cost him more than twenty years of shame. After saying it, both he and Chi Lie's faces turned red.

Chi Lie explained, " No! I really just missed you, and I don't want to sleep alone at night. But if you are willing to let me do something else, I will listen to you. "

The healthy, equal relationship that Teacher Tang had been looking forward to finally arrived. Perhaps to outsiders, Chi Lie was too immature. He held her all the time, kissed her every second, and occupied all of her time, which was too childish.

But Tang Shiqi just likes it this way. He doesn't need a " traditional " lover. He likes any intimate contact.

He is indulgent and enjoys it. He and Chi Lie are a perfect match.

" I do. " His face was red, but he smiled happily.

.....

The next morning, Chi Lie woke up in a daze and found Teacher Tang sitting by the bed and getting dressed. He didn't even open his eyes, but he just kept saying that he liked Teacher Tang.

He leaned over and kissed along Teacher Tang's lower back all the way to the back of her neck, messing up Teacher Tang's newly put-on clothes. But Teacher Tang was not angry.

Teacher Tang rubbed his messy head, " My family asked me to go to a dinner party, I will be back after dinner, if you want to go home, go home, or you can wait for me here. "

Chi Lie then opened his eyes and saw that Teacher Tang was still wearing a simple white shirt, but he was wearing casual suit pants. The workmanship details of the shirt were also different from before. You could tell from the buttons that the shirt was not cheap.

He immediately frowned, " Who are you going to see? Who is at the dinner party? "

Tang Shiqi's eyes were full of ridicule, " How come you can always find jealousy? "

But she also patiently explained, " My dad's partner. I stopped dancing in high school, and later studied management, so I had to return home. My dad is in the education industry, so it didn't conflict with my desire to run a dance studio. "

Tang Shiqi's father is in good health and will not be under any pressure in the next 20 years, so his father gave him a long period of " freedom " so that he can do what he likes first and then take on the financial responsibilities of the family.

But he now feels that " freedom " does not conflict with responsibility.

Chi Lie was keenly aware of something, " Is it ... because of me? "

Teacher Tang smiled and said, " The capital's educational resources are better, and your family is mainly developing here. You will eventually apply for the exam here, right? I don't want to live in a different place from you. "

It was obviously a good thing, but Chi Lie was not happy. " I said I can also apply for the exam near the county town. You don't need to do anything for me. "

Teacher Tang didn't care. He went to the county town to relax and escape from Liu Dingcheng. Now there was no need for that. His dance studio was originally going to be opened in the capital.

He was afraid that Chi Lie would feel pressured, so he told him all his thoughts, stroking Chi Lie's cheek with his thumb, " You can change places for me, why can't I? What's more, I just adjusted the plan that was disrupted by Liu Dingcheng. "

Chi Lie felt relieved, but still felt bad. He got up and hugged Teacher Tang tightly, giving her sticky kisses on the side of her face.

He was not wearing any clothes, so his body temperature and touch were transmitted to Teacher Tang through the thin shirt. Watching Teacher Tang's earlobe slowly turn red, he maliciously added teeth marks on Teacher Tang's ear.

Teacher Tang asked him softly, her face reddening, " When you apply for the exam, can you try to choose a place closer to my dad's headquarters? When we don't have many classes, we can have lunch together. "

Chi Lie felt that since they had been together, Teacher Tang had given him a lot, whether it was surprises or happiness.

He once worried that if he kept pressing her and Teacher Tang reluctantly agreed to be with him, what would he do if the two of them became awkward and distant?

But it's not.

Teacher Tang never refused his kisses or hugs, and was never reluctant to open her body.

Even if her face turned red as a lantern, she would directly express her needs. Even if her voice was as soft as a mosquito's, she would decisively express her love and say that she missed him.

No matter what wishes and requests Mr. Tang made, he would not bear to let them go unfulfilled. Moreover, Mr. Tang's request was simply a disguised way of satisfying himself.

He thought Teacher Tang was the perfect lover, but little did he know that Teacher Tang felt the same way.

Tang Shiqi likes to be close to her lover and likes any degree and form of intimacy.

No one will say to him " You are too clingy ", " How old are you? ", " Don't be so intimate outside ", " Be more sensible and obedient " anymore .

Chi Lie accepted all his requests, and before he even started to get clingy, Chi Lie would already be close to him.

Chi Lie promised him, " I will apply to be by your side. "

Chapter 60 He Got Bad Learning

63

Teacher Tang changed his shirt and went to the dinner on time, while Chi Lie stayed in bed to take a nap.

Not long after he closed his eyes, the phone rang. He thought it was Teacher Tang, so he picked up the phone immediately, but it was his mother's voice on the other end.

" Baby, why aren't you in your room? Did you go out so early? "

" Ah ..." He was reluctant to leave last night, and didn't get up this morning. For a moment, he forgot that he had sneaked out. " Yes, I went for a morning run and ate something while I was there. "

" Baby, your dad is having a dinner party, why don't you come too? "

He couldn't say harsh words to his mother now, but he didn't really want to go either. " It's useless for me to go to your dinner party. "

The mother was very insistent, " You must come. You and your father haven't seen each other for a long time. This time your father finally agreed to see you. You should be obedient. He is also trying hard. "

He thought again and realized that, yes, he couldn't always hide Teacher Tang. Easing the relationship with his father would be considered as being responsible for his and Teacher Tang's future.

Chi Lie, " Got it, send me the address. "

Although Teacher Tang's clothes from last night were no longer wearable, there were no marks on his body, so he just continued to wear them.

I took a taxi and arrived at the venue before the agreed lunch time. I entered the private room, but the other party had not arrived yet.

" Dad, Mom. " He greeted, but his father didn't look at him, just nodded.

He found a random seat and sat down. His mother sat next to him with her handbag. " Your father is talking to a very important partner recently. His son is similar to you. You may have ... common topics. "

" Ah? " His mother's words were so obscure that he didn't react for a moment.

Until my mother hinted, " Your father is already trying to accept it. As long as you don't look for those questionable people, your father can also try to accept it. It's a good thing. "

" The partner's son will be back soon, so you two can be friends. "

Mom's voice was very low, and her eyes truly showed this is " for your own good " , but he knew that Dad could hear it.

Mom is really accepting it for him, but Dad ... can't say he completely denies it, but he still connects him with interests.

Maybe it is the nature of mothers all over the world to arrange blind dates for their children.

Even if their children like the same sex, it cannot stop them from matchmaking.

My father probably thinks that even if his child likes the same sex, he wants the same sex to be of equal status and who can provide support to the family.

Sorry, he doesn't accept this understanding.

" I can't talk to him. " He immediately stood up and left.

" How do you know we can't get along when we haven't even started talking yet? " The mother grabbed his wrist and looked at him pleadingly. She hoped her son and husband could find a balance.

Chi Lie didn't want to do something like shaking off his mother's hand, but he absolutely couldn't stay here. He already had Teacher Tang, and how could he be worthy of Teacher Tang if he stayed here.

Just as I was struggling with this, the door of the private room opened and a middle-aged couple walked towards me. The man was gentle and elegant, while the woman was strong and capable. But no matter what kind of temperament it was, he felt that the face was inexplicably familiar, and this inexplicable feeling was explained when the third person came in.

How could he not look familiar? The third person who came in was the one who was gasping for breath in his arms yesterday.

He was a little surprised at first and felt that it was fate, but when he saw Teacher Tang's surprised expression, he felt uncomfortable.

Teacher Tang obviously didn't realize it was him. Did Teacher Tang know that the essence of this dinner was a " blind date " ? If he knew, why did he wear such an exquisite shirt and trousers, and also rarely styled his hair?

He sat down in silence, his eyes fixed on Teacher Tang. Teacher Tang didn't know whether he felt guilty or something, but kept avoiding his gaze.

The two parties briefly greeted each other and tried to find topics other than business to talk about, and inevitably talked about Chi Lie, the prospective college student.

Teacher Tang's mother obviously didn't take it too seriously. " The child is still young, so he should focus on his studies first. Even if the cooperation doesn't work out in the end, it won't hurt to make friends. "

What this means is that business cooperation should be separated from love life.

The mother nodded and continued the topic. After all, the other party did bring her son with him. Even if it had nothing to do with business cooperation, he still had other considerations.

The two sides were talking back and forth, and Chi Lie was overwhelmed. He just wanted to take Teacher Tang away and ask him, "Do you know that this dinner is a blind date? If you know, what about me?"

From the moment he entered the door, he had been looking at Teacher Tang, but Teacher Tang would occasionally respond and only look at his parents.

The more Teacher Tang avoided him, the more uneasy he felt.

Finally, Teacher Tang stood up, apologized and said he wanted to go to the bathroom.

" I'll go too. " He stood up, leaning on the table, bowed slightly, and walked straight out. He ignored the strange looks from both parents. He had been watching Teacher Tang for as long as he had been here. Teacher Tang's father had already noticed that something was wrong with him. But he didn't look angry. He just smiled faintly like Teacher Tang.

Teacher Tang had already said he was going out, so I had no choice but to follow him. The footsteps behind me were light, but their presence was very noticeable.

The hotel's bathroom was not vacant, but Chi Lie still pulled Teacher Tang into the cubicle. He probably looked unhappy. He knew how ugly his face looked when he looked cold. He didn't want to scare Teacher Tang, so he simply lowered his head and buried his face in Teacher Tang's neck.

The tone was resentful, " You are dressed so beautifully, but you are here to have a blind date with another man. "

Teacher Tang was afraid that others would hear her, so her voice tickled his ear like a feather, " It's just a shirt and pants, but it's my mother's finished product, and it's almost the same as before. "

" Is this my main point? " He took Teacher Tang's neck and sucked it hard. Teacher Tang hissed and leaned towards him. " Did you know in advance that this dinner was for a blind date? "

Unexpectedly, Teacher Tang's voice revealed happiness. " I know. It's good to know more people and have more choices. "

For a moment he thought he had misheard, his mind went blank, and he slowly moved away from Teacher Tang, as if he couldn't make any decent expression.

He heard himself asking blankly: " What about me? "

Teacher Tang seemed not to understand, " What's wrong with you? "

" We ... " He even took a step back subconsciously, " Are you not serious? "

Teacher Tang didn't say anything. He just looked at him and smiled for a while before he burst into laughter. Afraid that others might hear him, he immediately stopped laughing, but the smile was still on his face.

He stretched out his arms, hugged Chi Lie's waist and pulled him back, and finally had the heart to tell Chi Lie the truth, " I lied to you. My mother told me on my way here that I wanted to go on a blind date. Before I could refuse, she gave me your photo directly, so I came here. "

Seeing that Chi Lie was still in a daze, he had no choice but to continue explaining, " Who told you to always lie to me? I still remember the time you tricked me into taking photos. "

When she returned home yesterday, her mother instilled in her a series of "Guidelines for Controlling Men", telling her not to always be mad at men and run away.

Although he felt that Chi Lie didn't need to be controlled, he still wanted to try. Chi Lie looked very cute.

" Are you angry with me? " He hugged me tighter. " Then I'll kiss you and you'll forgive me, okay? "

Chapter 62 National Day Mid-session Theater

The 25-year-old Chi Lie is beginning to show his talent. He is young and promising, and maintains a good cooperative relationship with the Tang family passed down from his father. This is what the outside world says, but few people know that it is because of them that our parents established friendly and cooperative relations.

" Xiao Zhang, is your President Tang here? " Chi Lie asked Tang Shiqi's secretary.

As the National Day holiday was approaching, he took his day off a day early, but Tang Shiqi still had some things to deal with and didn't want to delay it until after the holiday, so he was alone in the empty room today.

It was fine at the company, he put all his effort into his work, but when he got home, there were traces of Tang Shiqi everywhere, and he really couldn't stand it.

Anyway, over the years, Teacher Tang always accepted his emotional willfulness and impulsiveness and came without saying hello.

" Hello, Mr. Chi. I'm here. "

" Okay, I'll go in then. "

The secretary was accustomed to these things. The two companies cooperated frequently, and even if they did not cooperate, the two men had a close personal relationship.

Chi Lie knocked on the door twice and went straight in. His first step was to pull up and close all the blinds in Tang Shiqi's office. His second step was to rush over, pounce on her and kiss her till he was satisfied.

Tang Shiqi even developed a conditioned reflex. When Chi Lie came, he would consciously move his chair back and turn towards Chi Lie, waiting for intimacy.

After the kiss, Chi Lie used his thumb to wipe away the silver hair from the corners of Tang Shiqi's mouth. " Your costume has arrived. Finish the photo shoot quickly, and then wear it on the bed for me to see. "

As her father got older, Tang Shiqi devoted a lot of time to the company, but she did not neglect dancing. Sometimes she went to dance institutions to help as a substitute teacher, and more often she was in her own dance studio, filming dances and posting them to her own media accounts.

Considering the company's image, he usually wears a mask and covers his eyes with scarves made of various materials, becoming a dance blogger who never shows his face.

But Chi Lie always finds alternative uses for those beautiful scarves and dance costumes.

Tang Shiqi took a deep breath and turned to the table to continue his work. " You can't tear it off again. The last one was custom-made. If you want to buy it again, it's sold out. "

Chi Lie smiled and said yes, then walked to the sofa in the reception area and lay down on his side. " Brother, do you like custom-made things? "

Tang Shiqi never gave him a perfunctory response, even if he had work to do. " Well ... customized items belong to me alone, and they are only connected to me in the world. Of course I like them. "

Chi Lie sat up suddenly, " Brother, let's customize a pair of rings for the two of us to establish a unique connection in the world. "

Tang Shiqi paused, stretched out his left hand, and looked at his empty fingers. " Well, okay. " Both of them are action-oriented, so they made an appointment to meet with a designer friend on the same day. The design idea of the ring is very unique.

The surface of the platinum ring is plain, but the pattern inside is quite mysterious. The initials of the two people's names are designed to look like chains entwined with each other.

Wearing it on the finger, no one else can see it, but their inner parts are tightly intertwined.

On the day they went to pick up the rings, the two of them lined up in the photo studio for a photo of themselves with a red background, both happily showing off the rings on their ring fingers.

The electronic version was posted on WeChat Moments without any text. Some things don't need to be said explicitly, everything is implied.

Of course, this tacit and beautiful atmosphere did not last long in the circle of friends.

After receiving more than twenty silent likes, they received the first comment blessing.

Jiang Zhi: Damn gay .

Chapter 63 Marry Him

61

" Then I'll kiss you and you'll forgive me, okay? "

Teacher Tang didn't know that he really didn't need any manual to control things. Just a casual word or a small gesture from him was enough to make Chi Lie fall deeply.

Chi Lie finally reacted and hugged Teacher Tang back tightly, kissing her until her head tilted back, and then he pressed the back of her head to hold her back, being as overbearing as he could be.

They didn't know how long it had been, but the two of them had unloaded their strength on the bathroom partition. Teacher Tang's lips were obviously swollen. He touched them with concern, leaned over and kissed them again, " Are you okay? Does it hurt? "

Teacher Tang opened her misty eyes and said, " A little bit, but it doesn't matter. I like kissing. " Chi Lie felt that his heartbeat could not be calmed down in front of Teacher Tang. He stepped forward and pressed his forehead against Teacher Tang's. He resisted the urge to kiss her again. " It's quite obvious. What should I do if I go out? "

Teacher Tang didn't care. " It's okay. I will tell my mother the truth. My parents don't interfere with my private life. "

Chi Lie helped Mr. Tang straighten his shirt and said about his own situation, " My parents will interfere, but they are very satisfied with you. "

Teacher Tang was very happy to hear this, and stood on tiptoe to kiss Chi Lie's chin, " Then you ... just pretend that you fell in love with me at first sight. "

Chi Lie slowly stroked the wrinkles on his shirt, " I fell in love with you at first sight. "

The two of them returned to the door of the private room, and they didn't know if anyone had heard what they did during that time, but they were happy anyway.

They were still holding hands, and they almost forgot to separate before entering the door. Chi Lie let Teacher Tang go in first, and he waited for two minutes.

" Coming back so late, did you meet anyone you know? " his mother asked him.

" Oh, yes. " He responded casually and sat back in his seat.

Just then the waiter came in to serve the food and the conversation stopped here. He looked across and saw Teacher Tang's mother saying something in Teacher Tang's ear.

Judging from the lip movements, it probably means: Did you meet Liu Dingcheng?

Teacher Tang waved his hands and shook his head, and his mother pointed at his neck and lips and said: Do you have a new boyfriend?

The dishes had already been served, and Teacher Tang evaded the question by saying he would talk about it when he got home.

Everyone was relatively quiet during the meal and talked about some insignificant food-related things. I asked the teacher and his family, who had lived in City C for many years and only returned to the capital in recent years, if they had any difficulty getting used to the environment. He couldn't help but wonder, if Teacher Tang and his family had not gone to City C , but had never gone to the capital, would they have met, would he have arrived before Liu Dingcheng? Even though Mr. Tang was still a kid when he was eighteen, who says that a wife can't be chosen and looked after from childhood?

The dinner lasted for nearly two hours, and the Tang family still did not agree to cooperate clearly, but they did not refuse either. After all, this was the first large-scale cooperation after returning to the capital, and it would have an impact on the follow-up.

The two families left the house and said goodbye politely at the door.

Chi Lie was thinking of finding a reason to kidnap Teacher Tang on the spot, but Teacher Tang was very conscientious and said that she had to go back to her apartment to pack some things and would not leave with her parents.

After saying that, he pushed his sleeve inconspicuously.

He immediately understood, signed up for a library in the same direction, and said that he had made an appointment with his former classmates to discuss the application.

It may seem a little abrupt, but Teacher Tang still said: " It's on the way, how about ... I give you a ride. "

The four parents' eyes were all focused on Teacher Tang, making her smile awkward and her ears slowly turn red.

His mother nudged him on the back with her elbow, implying that he should agree, and even received a rare look of approval from his father.

Teacher Tang's parents beside him also had hidden expectations for him, just like parents who send their children to kindergarten for the first time and finally wait for their children to take the initiative to make friends.

He took a step closer to Teacher Tang, " Okay, thank you ... "

Several names flashed through his mind in an instant, such as Mr. Tang, Brother Tang, etc., which were too ugly. Teacher Tang sounded better, and Wife sounded the best.

His mother laughed at him from behind. It might have been Teacher Tang's initiative. She started to match them up again. " Look, he can't say a word when he sees Xiao Tang. He even keeps looking at her while eating. He's not embarrassed at all. "

Teacher Tang's mother finally smiled from the bottom of her heart, " Then let the children go by themselves. We will discuss cooperation in detail next time. "

In the parking lot, Teacher Tang and her parents parked far away . Chi Lie snatched the car keys from Teacher Tang, opened the back seat and brought them in, not forgetting to protect the back of their heads.

Teacher Tang obediently found her position and hugged Chi Lie's waist. " What are you doing? A lot of people will be out at this time. "

Chi Lie was happy, and he put his nose against Tang Shiqi's neck and sniffed, " I hug my own wife, what does it have to do with others? "

Teacher Tang felt itchy and smiled foolishly, " I told you I'm a man, why are you yelling like that? "

Chi Lie was unreasonable, buried his head in Teacher Tang's neck, and said in a vague voice, " I've already said that a man's wife is also a wife. We have met both sides' parents, so aren't you my wife? "

Maybe because he just had dinner with his parents, he felt a little uncomfortable at the moment. Teacher Tang gently pushed Chi Lie's shoulder and said, " Let's go home first. It's so hot in the car. "

Chi Lie was silent for a while, then stopped joking. " We won't have a marriage certificate, and there will be no legal protection. After meeting the parents, it will be like we are married. I am so happy, Teacher Tang. "

He put all his weight on Teacher Tang and confided in her, " From a very early time, I secretly thought of you as my wife in my heart. "

I don't know if it was because of the summer heat or Chi Lie's words, but Teacher Tang's face felt a little hot. He stroked the back of Chi Lie's neck like he was comforting a restless puppy.

He continued the conversation following Chi Lie's words, " When was very early? Can you tell me? "

Chi Lie laughed, " That should be the first day I met you. Jiang Zhi said he wanted to sleep with you. At that time, I thought, why would my wife sleep with you? "

After saying that, the two of them laughed together in the carriage.

Feeling the rise and fall of Teacher Tang's chest, he half-raised his body and asked, " Are you my wife now? "

Teacher Tang nodded, " It has been a long time ago ..."

Chi Lie's heart skipped a beat, and he suddenly said, " What should I do? I suddenly want to enter the bridal chamber with my wife. "

Not allowing Teacher Tang to refuse, he immediately continued: " I have been thinking about this day since the first day you drove me to school. Teacher Tang, will you agree to it? "

His eyes were passionate and obsessed. Teacher Tang found that she really liked this straightforward love, even though it was a little out of line, a little crazy, and a little unreasonable. But he is willing.

Chapter 64 Our Future

62

Time flies, and the summer vacation is over in a blink of an eye. Chi Lie's university is close to the city, and it is only a twenty-minute drive from Tang Shiqi's office.

There are few courses in college, and it is rare to have classes in one day. Even if there is only one class, which is only two hours including the break, he will go to see Teacher Tang.

Teacher Tang has just taken office and is very busy. She spends more time at her father's company than at her own dance studio.

Chi Lie didn't mind either. He was happy just sitting there and watching.

This afternoon is a holiday, and he came here right after the fourth class. Teacher Tang gave him a legitimate " status " , and the young master of the Chi family came here to exchange and study.

He sat on the sofa opposite Teacher Tang, watching the white color on Teacher Tang's nails when she wrote, watching Teacher Tang's hair fluttering when the air conditioner was blowing air, watching the ankles wrapped in black socks under the suit pants, and watching the wrist bones faintly visible in the cuffs of the white shirt.

When Teacher Tang looked up and stretched, he realized that an entire afternoon had passed. Teacher Tang smiled at him apologetically, walked to the door and locked it, then sat down beside him and leaned into his arms.

Tang Shiqi: " If you don't have any study tasks, you can go out and play with your classmates instead of wasting time sitting here. "

Chi Lie held him, rocking his body left and right, coaxing him like a child, " I've played around in the capital, why don't you just have fun and stop pushing me out. "

Tang Shiqi held his face and laughed, " Don't make a big deal out of it. How can you say that you are pushing the issue away? One day you will have to work, and I will also be on business trips. You have to get used to it. "

Chi Lie had a lot of reasons, " It's precisely because I know that we will be apart for a long time in the future that I'm seizing the moment now. Do you think I'm childish? Annoying? "

" Of course not. " Tang Shiqi stretched her neck and rubbed her cheek against Chi Lie's. " I'm afraid I'll waste too much of your time. Don't always focus on me. "

Chi Lie was not very happy, but Tang Shiqi did not continue the topic.

Tang Shiqi felt that Chi Lie wasted almost all of his time outside of studying on herself. Yes, it was a waste. How could sitting in his office for an entire afternoon not be considered a waste? He liked Chi Lie's hug after work, but he also felt that he shouldn't delay Chi Lie because of his bad habit of being " clingy " .

He stood up and returned to his seat. " You said this morning that military training restricted accommodation outside the home, right? "

The university Chi Lie attends requires that one must wait six months before applying for formal day study. If one wants to apply in advance, a series of guarantee procedures must be completed, which is rather troublesome and requires the parents to step in.

So Chi Lie had to stay out every night. During the military training, the management was strengthened and they might have to sleep separately for a while.

When this matter was mentioned, Chi Lie immediately looked worried, but Tang Shiqi wanted to take this opportunity to make adjustments with Chi Lie and get the relationship back to a more balanced state.

Chi Lie always takes him too seriously.

" Seven days, nothing. "

Tang Shiqi remembered that he said this in the office that day.

At that time, I thought that it didn't matter if we didn't sleep together for seven days. Sometimes we could still find time to see each other at noon, and it was not impossible for us to contact each other via mobile phones.

But today, the fifth day of Chi Lie's military training, he was the first to give up.

He now realized how stupid he was at that time. Chi Lie was right. There would be various uncertainties in the future that would cause them to be separated for a short period of time, so why not cherish the time they could spend together indefinitely now?

He felt that it was not shameful to express his longing for his partner, and it was not a bother to disturb his boyfriend's sleep, so at 11:30 in the middle of the night when he couldn't sleep, he still called Chi Lie for the fifth time that day.

Chi Lie was probably very tired from the military training. He was usually full of energy at this time, but today he answered the phone a few minutes late .

His voice was hoarse from just waking up, " Hmm? What's wrong? "

Although she is shy, Teacher Tang never hides her expression, " Chi Lie ..."

There was a stickiness in his voice that she herself could not detect, as well as a coquettish nasal tone.

He never knew what kind of temperament he exuded, it could only be clearly heard by Chi Lie and hit his eyes.

" I missed you. " he said.

There was no usual prompt response from the other end of the line, only increasingly obvious breathing sounds, followed by rustling sounds, and the sound of a door closing gently.

Chi Lie went into the dormitory bathroom. Tang Shiqi knew what he was doing, so she accepted it as normal and said what she wanted to say, " I miss you so much. "

He has learned that at times like this, Chi Lie needs his voice and needs him to say something that cannot be expressed in public.

For example, at critical moments, he knew that Chi Lie liked to hear him call, " ... husband. "

He didn't know why a 19-year-old " kid " was so obsessed with such an old-fashioned title as " husband " , but he would give Chi Lie whatever he liked.

After a brief moment of calm, Chi Lie said to him in a hoarse voice, "Wait for me," and then the call was hung up.

He held his empty cell phone in his arms, using the residual heat from the phone as comfort.

After more than forty minutes, the door was slammed open and Chi Lie appeared in front of him, panting, obviously having run all the way from the entrance of the community.

Just as he was about to stand up, Chi Lie strode over and hugged him.

The long-lost tight hug made him feel infinitely happy and he smiled unconsciously.

Chi Lie was still wearing the air conditioner, and the summer night outside was hot. " What are you laughing at? "

Tang Shiqi was so happy that she put her arms around Chi Lie's waist and said, " It's been five days and it feels like we haven't seen each other for five years. We are so useless. "

He also wrapped his arms tightly around Chi Lie's neck, " Then how did you get out? "

Before Chi Lie could even catch his breath, he began to kiss Tang Shiqi madly, " Jump over the wall, take a taxi, and then run in. "

" I miss you too. " He was more forthcoming than Teacher Tang, " but I dare not say it, I'm afraid you'll think I'm childish or annoying, afraid that you ... don't miss me. "

Tang Shiqi felt that her heart was wrinkled by Chi Lie's voice, " I miss you so much. Tell me everything in the future. I was wrong. We should seize every opportunity to be together. "

If sitting in the office and watching your lover for an entire afternoon is a waste, then playing games with classmates, sleeping in the dormitory, singing K and eating is even more of a waste.

is far less meaningful than the former.

Chi Lie finally untied the knot in his heart and smiled wantonly, " It's been a long time since we last did it. "

" Five days. " Tang Shiqi consciously raised his neck to facilitate his conquest of the city. " Today is the fifth day. "

Chi Lie: " Why do you remember it so clearly? "

Tang Shiqi: " Because I like it. "

Chi Lie: " What do you like? "

Chi Lie originally wanted to coax Teacher Tang into saying some dirty words, saying that he liked having sex with him or that he liked certain parts of his body.

But I didn't expect that Teacher Tang's voice was so sincere.

He said: " I like Chi Lie. "

Because I like Chi Lie, we are close to each other, and I miss him.

It is like this today and will not change from now on.

The same is true for Chi Lie.

——Main text · End——